00141918

THE
ASIATIC SOCIETY OF BOMBAY
Town Hall, Bombay.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018

THE

WORKS

OF

SPENCER, CAMPION, HANMER,

AND

MARLEBVRROVGH.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

Containing

DOCTOR MEREDITH HANMER'S,

AND

HENRY MARLEBVRROVGH'S

CHRONICLES OF IRELAND.

00141918

THE

CHRONICLE

OF

IRELAND.

COLLECTED BY

MEREDITH HANMER,

DOCTOR OF DIUINITY,

In the Yeare

1571.

Dublin:

Printed by the Society of Stationers.

M.DCXXXIII.

REPRINTED AT THE HIBERNIA PRESS,

FOR THE PROPRIETORS,

By John Morrison.

1809.

THE

CHRONICLE OF IRELAND:

COLLECTED BY

MEREDITH HANMER,

Doctor of Diuinity.

THE SECOND PART.

THREE hundred yeeres after the flood, one *Bartholanus* the sonne of *Sera*, with his three sonnes, *Languinus*, *Salanus*, and *Ruthurugus*, and their wives of the posterity of *Iaphet*, are said to have arrived in this Island. This opinion followeth *Giraldus Cambrensis*, and him followeth *Polychronicon*; and my selfe, not meaning to swarve from the common opinion, thought good to acquaint the posterity therewith. With this *Bartholanus*, as their Captaine, came many of that line, and multiplied exceedingly for the space of 300 yeeres, to the number of 9000 fighting men. Little is remembred of *Bartholanus*, saving that with many hands he rid and made plaine a great part of the Country, making paces thorow woods and thickets; and that his sonnes left doubtfull

remembrances of their names; the first to *Languinus* Poole, the second to mount *Salanga* (since named Saint *Dominicks* hill) and the third to *Ruthurugus* his Poole.

At the same time, according to the common saying, Where God hath his Church, the Devill hath his Chappell, many of the cursed seed of *Cham* arrived also in this Island, with their Captaine *Oceanus*, the sonne of *Cham*, called of some *Mena*, of *Moses*, *Mitzraim*. First he was in the yeere of the world 1802, the second Commander of Ægypt, planted Colonies along the river Nilus, and after hee had reigned there 7 yeares, he endevoured by navigation to subdue unto his Empire many parts of the world. Thus waxing strong and mighty upon the seas, hee prevailed much, and travelled farre; hee came to these North parts of the world, landed many of his followers, and in remembrance of his voyage, left his name upon the seas which wash these lands, which of him is yet called the *Ocean* sea.

After his departure hence his cursed line multiplied not so much in number as in all mischiefe and rebellion, they set up a King of their owne, they opposed themselves against the posterity of *Iaphet;* they were great in strength, and huge of stature, and attempted great matters after the example of *Cham* or *Zoroastres* the Magician, and *Nimrod* grandfather to *Ninus:* they repined at the blessings

bestowed upon *Sem* and *Iaphet*, thinking it necessary to withstand and prevent all lawfull rule and dominion, lest the curse of slavery prophecied by *Noah* should light upon them, as at length it did. Many bickerings and skirmishes were amongst them, the successe was variable on both sides, betweene the lawfull governours and these usurpers, so much to the griefe of them that coveted to live in peace under their rightfull Princes, that they determined with the chance of one generall battell either wholly to subdue those rebellious miscreants and tyrannous Giants, or else to end their lives in freedome, and so to be rid of farther misery. They assemble together, they gather their forces out of all parts of the land, and comming to joyne battell with the Giants, after they had fought fiercely together for the space of certaine houres, the victory inclined to the rightfull part, so that the lawfull Kings prevailing against this cursed brood, great slaughter was made upon the whole sort of that pestiferous generation, and the Kings meaning to deliver themselues of all dangers in time to come, used their happy victory with great cruelty, which turned to their owne confusion. For they spared neither man, woman, nor child that came in their way, for more despite and fuller satisfaction of their determinate revenge, neither vouchsafed they to bury the carkasses of their slaine enemies, but cast them out like a sort of dead dogs, whereof (through stinke of the same) such an infective pestilence insued in all places throughout the Island by corruption of the ayre,

that few escaped with life, except those that got them away by sea; yea the infection was so great of those cursed carkasses of *Cham* his posterity, that the dogs and wolves died thereof. And here ended the whole race of *Bartholanus* and his of-spring, and the Country (excepting a few silly soules scattered in remote places) was unpeopled.

And here commeth, in a tale yet in great request among the *Irish*, how that one *Ruanus* a Giant, fearing this mortality, fled into a cave, and continued there till nature forced him to come forth for food and nourishment, so hungry was hee that every thing was meat that came to his mouth: hee covering his face with mosse and grasse, fled to the farthest parts of the land into the winde to avoid the infection, and so for a long time hauing taking the advantage of the ayre, escaped death. He is said to have lived two thousand and one and forty yeeres (which is more than twice the age of *Methushelah*) vnto the time (forsooth) of Saint *Patrick*, to whom hee discoursed at large (say they) of all the accidents of former times. In the end he was of Saint *Patrick* baptized, and died after the birth of our Saviour, in the yeere 432, and lyeth buried at Loghry in Ormund, where there is a Church dedicated to his name, and he is numbred among the Confessors of Ireland.

And to second this fable with two precedent lies, the which I should haue begun withall in the front of

this History (as all Irish Antiquaries doe) but that I would not abuse the reader, being purposed beginning and ending to deliuer the truth, I read as followeth.

Whereas in the yeere of the world 1525, *Noah* began to admonish the people of vengeance to come by a generall deluge for the wickednesse and detestable sinne of man, and continued his admonition 120 yeeres, building an Arke for the safegard of himselfe and his family; one *Cesara* (say they) according vnto others *Cesarea*, a Neece of *Noah*, (when others seemed to neglect this forewarning) rigging a navy, committed her selfe with her adherents to the seas to seeke adventures, and to avoid the plagues that were to fall; there arrived in Ireland, with her three men, *Bithi*, *Laigria*, and *Fintan*, and fifty women; within forty dayes after her arrivall the universall flood came upon them and those parts, as well as upon the rest of the world, and drowned them all, in which perplexity of minde and imminent danger beholding the waves overwhelming all things before their eyes, *Fintan* is said to have beene transformed into a Salmon, and to have swoome all the time of the deluge about Vlster, and after the fall of the water recovering his former shape, to have lived longer then *Adam*, and to have delivered strange things to the posterity, so that of him the common speech riseth; *If I had liued Fintans yeeres I could say much.*

But to let these fables passe: The next plantation

after *Bartholanus* (as it is recorded amongst the collections of Irish antiquities) is this in effect, that *Magog* the sonne of *Iaphet* planted Colonies in *Scythia* neere the river of *Tanais*, from whence about the yeere of the world two thousand three hundred and seventeene, one *Nemedus* with his foure sonnes *Starius*, *Garbaneles*, *Anvinus*, and *Fergusius*, Captains over great companies of armed men, were sent into this Island now called *Ireland*. And passing by *Græcia* tooke with them such voluntaries as were willing to adventure with them, they landed, inhabited the country, and multiplied exceedingly, although not without continuall warres which they held with the Giants of *Chams* posterity for the space of two hundred yeeres and odde. In the end the Giants prevailing, chased them out of the land, so that they retired into Scythia, and some to Greece. This was about the yeere after the creation 2333, from which time the Giants kept possession of the land without forraigne invasion for many yeeres, but yet in all that space their mindes not being set upon any goodnesse, but altogether upon mischiefe, they made no good lawes, framed no commonwealth, they obeyed no Magistrate, but fell at variance amongst themselues, measuring all things by might, and seditiously vexed each other.

In the yeere of the world 2416, and after the universall flood 750 yeeres (as the Scottish History declareth) one *Gathelus* the sonne of *Nealus* a Gre-

cian, upon displeasure for sundry rodes made into Macedonia and Achai, being exiled and banished his countrey, with a great number of his adherents and complices, went into Ægypt in the dayes of *Moses*, where he found favour in the sight of King *Pharaoh*, insomuch that he married with *Scota* his daughter, continued there about 93 yeeres, and multiplied exceedingly. *Iohannes Major Scotus* calleth the verity of this History in question, *de hac prima profectione de Græcia & Ægypto figmentum reor: I am of opinion* (saith hee) *that this first going out of Greece and Ægypt is but fayned:* yet let us goe forward. When *Gathelus* understood that the land was shortly for the wickednesse of the people to suffer great plagues, he prepared a fleet, shipped Grecians and Ægyptians, hoised up saile, and came upon the coast of Numidia, now called Barbary, thence they were put back, to sea they went, and came to the coast of Spaine now called Portingall (as they say) since that time of him called Port-gathell. The inhabitants of the place resisted them, gave them a sore battell, and in the end after parlie, *Gathelus* was intreated, and by them directed to take his voyage into Galitia, which eftsoones he did. There in a short time they waxed so populous, that the countrey could not sustaine them: whereupon *Gathelus* called a Councell, and being resolved what to doe, tooke a great number of them with him to sea, and arrived in Ireland, and there grew into such estimation with the barbarous

people, that for knowledge espesially in all languages (having travelled many Countreys, as is afore mentioned) he was highly honoured. For he not only enriched and beautified the Irish tongue, but also, as is said, taught them letters, sought up their antiquities, and trained their youth in warlike exercises, after the manner of the Grecians and Ægyptians from whence he descended. Note here (gentle reader) before I wade further into this History three contrary opinions of this *Gathelus* the sonne of *Nealus:* The Scottish Historiographers say, it was 750 yeeres after the flood. *Thomas Walsingham* Monke of S. Albons, writeth it was 1000 yeeres and odde after the delivery of the children of Israel out of Ægypt (which must be *anno mundi* 3455, to wit, one 1000 yeeres after the former computation) calling him a noble man of Scythia whom the Ægyptians banished out of Ægypt. *Iohn Harding*, a great Antiquary (that knew best in his time the state of Scotland) delivereth, that *Gathelus* and *Scota* came to these parts after the birth of Christ, *in anno* 75. This I give as a caveat, referring unto the discreet reader the dissonance that I finde in the observation of times, to bee considered of, promising to lay downe faithfully euery thing as I find the same, as shall appeare in that which followeth. And now to the history where we left. It is said that this *Gathelus* of his wife *Scota* commanded that his followers Grecians and Ægyptians should be called *Scoti*, that is, *Scottishmen.* And *Hector Boetius* in

the History of Scotland sticketh not to write, that upon his marriage with *Scota*, the foresaid commandement was published, and that his followers in Ægypt, Barbary, Portingall, Galitia, and over Spaine, were called *Scoti*. But how true that is, it may appeare by the Roman Histories (which haue noted the accidents of those times) in all which there is no mention of the Scots before the time of *Constantius* the Emperour (which was about the yeere of Christ 310 who lyeth buried at York, and was father to *Constantine* the great.

Paulus Iouius writeth, Scotland tooke that name upon the comming of a forraine and no great ancient nation. No Latine writer before Marcellinus in Iulian the Emperours time (which was about the yeere 362*) remembreth the Scots: neither doth it well appeare out of what Country the Scots first came into Albion, when as by the Annals not only of English, but of Scottish Antiquities varying among themselues, great obscurity is brought among doubtfull things. Some bring their originall from Ireland, others from Dania, Cimbrica, Chersonesus, and the Islands of Gothland and Norway; neither wanted there some which were of opinion, they came from Spaine, deriving the name of Scottishmen from Moses himselfe, and the Ægyptians, as Hector Boetius the Scottish Chronicler;* yet *Hector* himselfe preventing as it were the like objection, confesseth that in the third yeere of *Adrian* the Emperor (which was after the birth of Christ

about 122 yeeres) the name of *Scots* [a] was not knowne unto the Romans.

In short time after the retinue of *Gathelus* searched the North-east and North-west Ilands, and entred the Land which now is called Scotland, so also called (as the Scotish will have it) of *Scota.* [b] But many grave writers have stumbled at the certainty of this story, yet I finde for certaine, that Ireland was called *Scotia maior*, and the other *Scotia minor*, and oftentimes confusedly the one taken for the other, and the words to be of no great antiquity. *Capgrave* in the life of Saint *Columbanus* [c] saith; *Ireland of old was called Scotland, from whence the Scottish nation inhabiting Albania (next vnto great Britaine) now called Scotland tooke their originall. Fiacrius* an Hermite being asked of a Bishop in France what hee was, among other things answered; *Ireland the Iland of Scots is the native soile of mee and my parents.* It also appeareth by *Orosius, Claudian, Isidore, Hubaldus, Beda*, the English Legend, the Martyrologe *secumdem usum Sarum, Marianus, Ionas in vita Sancti Columbani, Aimoinus, Cæsarius, &c.* that Ireland and Scotland were usually taken one for the other.

But before I goe any further, I thinke it not amisse

[a] *Scot. Hist. lib.* 4.

[b] *Hector Boet. in descript. regni Scotiæ. Et lib.* 1. *histor. Scot.*

[c] *Iohannes Capgrave in vita Sancti Colum. Idem in vita Sancti Fiacri.*

to say somwhat to this word *Scotus* or *Scottus*, the which *Hector Boetius* carrieth away as derived of *Scota*, and as thing granted. There came to this Countrey of Ireland at three severall times, before *Gathelus*, great Commanders of Scythia (as I have said before) of the posterity of *Iaphet*, planted themselues, divided the land with great troubles, and when they were at the worst, alwayes they left a remnant of their nation behinde them. *Beda* every where calleth them not *Scotos*, but *Scottos;* so that I finde in the word a double alteration, *y* turned into *o*, and *th* into *tt*. Also in low Germany they call the Scythians and Scottish, Schotten. *Nennius* the Britain writeth, *Scythæ Hiberniam obtinuerunt, the Scythians gat Ireland.* King *Alfredus* translating the history of *Orosius* into the Saxon tongue, termeth the Scots, *Scyttan.* The borderers upon Scotland, cal them to this day, *Skyttes* and *Skets.* *Walsingham* writeth, *Of the country called Sicia (alias Scythia) wee haue Scita, Sciticus, Scoticus, Scotus and Scotia.* *Ranulphus* Monke of Chester, writeth, as Sir *Iohn Trevisa* the Priest in old English laid it downe; *Scotts bene called as it were Scytes, for they came out of Scytia.* *Matthew* Monk of Westminster, saith, *Ex Pictis & Hibernensibus, Scotioriginem habuerunt, quasi ex diversis nationibus compacti; Scot enim illud dicitur quòd ex diversis rebus in unum acervum congregatur, deinde verò terra illa quæ prius Albania dicebatur à Scotis Scotia nuncupatur,* (anno gratiæ 77.) *Of Pictes and Irish the Scots had their*

originall, as it were compacted of divers nations; for that is called Scot which of divers things is gathered into one heap, afterwards that Land which was first called Albania of the Scots is called Scotia.

And *Beda* [d] writeth that the Country now called Scotland was inhabited by Pictes that were Scythians; againe, *In processe of time* (saith he) *Britaine besides Britaines and Pictes receiued a third nation that is of Scots upon the side of the Pictes.*

Of the same opinion is *Volateran* [e] and *Iohannes Major Scotus*, although *Hector Boetius* dissemble it. *Richard Stanihurst* [f] the great Philosopher and Antiquary of Ireland, writeth, *A quo primum initio Scotiæ nomen sit tractum, nondum plane perspectum video, &c. Of what first originall the word Scotia is drawne, I haue not yet found out.* And touching the truth of the History of *Gathelus* and *Scota*, hee saith; *To the end the worthinesse of so great a mariage delivered unto the posterity should florish, all these Grecians call themselues Scots; and Ireland where they first seated themselus, Scotiam. But all this as a vaine fable George Buchanan, and before him Humfrey Lloide have quite reiected, and if Hector Boetius bee not the chiefe forger of this his-*

[d] *Beda Ang. hist. lib.* 1. *cap.* 1.

[e] *Volat geograph. lib.* 3.

[f] *Io. Maior de gest. Scot. l.* 1. *c.* 4. *De rebus Hiber. lib.* 1.

tory, or rather vaine fable, yet he hath besprinckled (after his manner) the whole discourse with lies. With great ambition hath that silly writer labored to advance the glory of his nation, in the which endeauour, hee hath little regarded the honour of his Country and his owne credit. For he hath purchased this amongst the learned, that where as he would seeme to write all for the loue of the truth, they will beleeue in a manner nothing to be true which he wrote: For to what purpose should he commend to the poserity the acts of his ancestors with such maiesty of words, that they have quailed the Spaniard; vanquished the Irish with their only austere countenance, triumphed as often as pleased themselves over the bordering Britaines; where they pitched foot, subiected all as furious victors; that thou maist think the Scottish not so much to have invaded forraigne Countryes, as to have removed to their proper possessions. These fabulous dreames happely may move admiration to some old wives, applause to some Abderas, and laughter to the discreete reader. The Scotish had as other nations tofore (though now famous) base beginning, dusked and obscured with some barbarous rudenesse, and this had beene more discretion to confesse, then to vaunt or crake among the ignorant, with boast of their fained doings. Thus farre *Stanihurst:*

And now (with *Hector Boetius* his leave) as the followers of *Gathelus* and his wife *Scota* in Egypt, Greece, Barbary, Portugall, Galitia, and over all

Spaine, were not called *Scoti* (as before is remembred) no more were they termed in Ireland and Scotland, but corruptly of *Scytæ, Scoti,* comming originlly out of Scythia. And it were more honour in mine opinion for these nations, to derive their originall from Scythia then from Egypt, for two causes; first for that the Scythians are more ancient then the Egyptians, as *Trogus, Volateran,* and *Marianus Scotus* do write; secondly for that the Scythians come of *Iaphet* that was blessed, and the Egyptians of *Cham* that was accursed, but in this case leaving every man to his owne choice; I will returne the History.

In the antiquities of Ireland it is generally receiued that *Gathelus* (of whom I spake before) gave the Irishmen the language, which of him they call *Gaodhealgh* in British *Gwidhealaec,* that is, a language compounded of many tongues, and so it may well be; for by reason of his great trauell he had skill in many tongues. Although, as they say, he were a Grecian borne, yet I finde no Greek in the Irish tongue; yet for their comming from Spaine, which they so much urge, *Iohannes Major Scotus* [g] forsooth hath found one Spanish word, *bona dies,* in Irish *vennoka die;* to which I answere, *una hirundo non facit ver;* but indifferently to examine the matter, wee finde that diversity of times, alteration of government, invasion of strangers, planting of new Colo-

[g] *Jo. Maior. hist. Scot. lib.* 1. *c.* 9.

nies, and conversing with forraigne nations doe alter languages. The Hebrewes by reason of their peregrination and captivities do smach of the Chaldees, Syriack, and Arabick tongues. The Slavonian tongue, as *Surius* [h] and others record, without exception, at this day is the most dispersed language upon the earth; for the Muscovites, Ruthenes, Russians, Dalmatians, Bosnenses, Croatians, Istrians, Carnians, Carniolanians, Carinthians, Stirians, Mæsians, Servians Bulgarians, with other nations reaching to Constantinople, as Bohemians, Lusatians, Silesians, Moravians, Polonians, Circasians, Quinquemontanians, even unto Pontus, and the remnant of Vandals, beyond the river Albis, through Germany, into the North, have the language, and yet we have neither their characters, not ancient Annals extant. Saint *Ierome* borne in Strido in the confines of Dalmatia and Pannonia, is said to have translated the Bible into the Slavon tongue, but whether it be in that language extant, let him report that knoweth it. *Gothi, Hypogothi, Gepidi, Vandali, Hunni, Alani,* though they vary in name, yet they vse one language, saith *Paulus Diaconas.* The Italian, Spanish, and French tongues are compounded of the Latine. The German (high and low country) Saxon, Scottish and English have great affinity. Northwales, Southwales, Cornwall, and little Britaine in France, as *Cambrensis* and Sir *Io. Price* have learnedly discoursed; but the

[h] *Laur. Surius ver. in orbe gest. ad annum.* 1501.

Irish (excepting the Redshanks and the Scottish of the haye londe) have affinity with no tongue (as I can learne) more then with the British language.

Many reasons there are (gentle reader) to induce thee to bee of that opinion; first of all according unto the first command, the Celticke tongue was of force in all these Northerne parts. *Bodinus* writeth, that the British and Celtick language was all one. *Pausanias* the Grecian maketh mention how the Celts in their language called a horse *Marc*, and three horses *Trimarc*, the which the Welshman useth to this day with a gutturall alteration, *Margh* and *Treemargh*. Also *Camden* the learned Antiquary of this our age, is of this opinion (remembring the story of *Gurguntius*, and the infinite number of British words in ure among the Irish, the which he termeth, *infinitam vim Britannicarum dictionum*) that the Britaines first peopled this land. And although of a long time (by reason of troubles and alterations) the speech grew wholly out of vse; yet afterwards in successe of time it was revived. Secondly the British and Irish oft matched together, so that there grew among them great alliance and affinity, to the furtherance of the language. *Mare* King of Cornwall *anno* 459 married with *Label Isode* that built Isodes Chappell (or Chappell Isode) and Isodes Tower in Dublin, shee was the King of Irelands daughter. *Edwal ap Meiric* Prince of Wales in the time of *Edelred*, *anno* 992 married in Ireland. *Iago ap Edwal* Prince of Wales in the

time of *Cnute*, *anno* 1031 married in Ireland. In the time of *Edward* the Confessor, *Conan* the sonne of *Iago* Prince of Wales married with *Ranulph* daughter *of Alfred* King of Dublin, *anno* 1041. In the time of *William Rufus*, *Arnulph* Earle of Pembroke married with the daughter of *Marogh* King of Ireland *anno* 1101; at the same time *Magnus* the sonne of *Herald* married with another daughter of the said King. In the time of *Henry* the first and King *Steuen* lived *Griffith ap Conan* Prince of Wales, that was wont to brag of three things, that his mother was an Irishwoman, his grandmother an Irishwoman, and that hee himselfe was borne, and of a child brought vp in Ireland. In the time of *Henry* the second, *Biryd* the sonne of *Owen Gwyneth* Prince of Wales, being Lord of Cloghran in Ireland, begat his sonne *Howel* upon an Irish Gentlewoman. In the same Kings raigne *Richard Strangbow* Earle of Pembroke, married with *Eva* the daughter of *Dermotte Mac Morrogh* King of Leinster. Thirdly, when there was any trouble in Ireland, they fled to Wales; when they had any warres or rebellion there, they came for refuge and aide into Ireland: hereof came the shaking of hands, *Brother Brannagh*, *Brother Erinagh*. In the life of *Henry* the third, it is written, that when *Othobon* the Popes Legate came to Oxford, and soiourned at Osney Abbey, among other schollers, some for one cause, some for another, that were there, a poore Irish scholler (*Matthew Paris* calleth him *Capellanum Hibernensem*) drew neere unto the kitchin dresser, and praid

for some releefe; the cook took a ladell full of hot liquor and threw it in his face; a Welch scholler standing by tooke his bow, and shot the cook through with an arrow (*Stow* writeth that the cook was the Legates brother) the hurly burly was great, the schollers came together in armes (and as it is said, one *Odo* of Kilkenny was their ensigne bearer) the Cardinals men were well beaten, the Cardinall himselfe to save his life fled secretly at a posterne gate to the King, made a grievous complaint, and craved the aide of armed men to fetch off his men, and thereof arose great troubles; but to proceed. *Dermotte Mac Morogh* King of Leinster, being banished out of his country, had aide out of Wales. *Conan* the sonne of *Iago*, *Griffith ap Conan*, *Rees ap Tewder*, *Owen* the sonne of *Cadogan*, *Kadwalader* the sonne of *Griffith ap Conan*, *Marlgon ap David*, Princes of Wales; *Algar* Earle of Chester, *Arnulph* Earle of Pembroke, *Magnus* the sonne of *Herald*, *William de Bruse* Lord of Breknock, with his wife and children, in extremity, tooke Ireland for their refuge, where they found favor and kindnesse to their own hearts desire, as in the British Chronicles published by *Caradoc* of Sancarban, *Cambrensis*, *Humfrey Lloid*, and Doctor *Powel*, doth more plainly appeare. These two nations conversed much one with another; Sir *Tristram* one of the Knights of the round Table, came to Ireland. *Morogh* brother to the King of Ireland (whom *Caxton* calleth *Morhaus*) was one of King *Arthurs* Knights. *Merlin* the Welch Prophet came twice to Ireland,

and in Ofaby there is a Chappell bearing his name: the occasion of his first comming was this. There was a noble man of Ireland which had a suit unto the King of England, with whom *Merlin* was great, to whom he said, *Merlin*, if thou wilt effect my sute, come to Ireland, and I will give thee as much land as thou shalt see round about thee: it was done; after his arrivall, *Merlin* demanded his promise, the noble man put him into a cellar, where was a grate, and without a bawne, with an high wall, looke out (saith the Irish man) the Welch Prophet could not see a quoits cast from him, and thus was he deceived, having left his spirit of prophecy at home. But to our purpose.

Fourthly, the first conquerors in *Henry* the seconds times, that brake the ice into this land, were Welch men, whose names and seates to this day are fresh in memory. *Rees ap Tewder* Prince of Southwales had a daughter called *Nesta*, who by King *Henry* the first had issue, *Henry*, and he had issue *Meiler Fitz Henry* and *Robart;* she was afterwards married to *Stephan*, and he had issue, *Robert Fitz Stephan*, and his issue were *Radulph* and *Mereduk;* shee had a third husband, *Giraldus* Steward of Pembroke, whose mother was *Gladys* the daughter of *Rywall ap Conyn*, this *Girald* had issue by her, *Maurice Fitz Gerald*, *William Fitz Gerald*, and *David* Bishop of Menevia, now called Saint Davids: *Maurice Fitz Gerald* had issue, *William*, *Girald*, *Alexander*, and *Nesta* a

daughter, wife to *Harvey de Monte Marisco; William Fitz Gerald* had issue (by *Ellen* sister to Earle *Richard Strongbow*) *Reimund* and *Griffin*, of these descend all the *Geraldins* in Ireland. A neece (a sister say others) of *Robert Fitz Stephans* and *Maurice Fitz Gerald* married with one *Barry*, and hee by her had issue, *Robart Barry*, *Philip Barry*, *Walter Barry*, and *Girald Barry* (otherwise called *Giraldus Cambrensis* the great Antiquary) of these descend all the *Barries* in Ireland. There came with them and after them out of Wales, the *Prendergastes*, *Welches*, *Whites*, *Goughes*, and *Williams*, now called *Mac William* of the North.

The Irish Chroniclers, as *David Curran*, *Nicolas Maguize* (both sometimes Bishop of Leighlin) and others, call them Brittones, Wallones, and Wallenses. It is a name the Saxons gave them; though they were the true natives of Britaine, yet they called them Welshmen, that is, strangers, as more at large is to bee seen in *Cambrensis.*[1] These gave Welsh names to places, which continue to this day; in the Dioces of Leighlin there is a town called *villa Wallicoru*, the town of Welchmen. *Carreg* & *Craig* in the British or Welsh tongue is a ston, or rock, and of the Britaines, *Carregfergus*, *Carreggmont-Griffin*, *Carregg in Shurie*, *Carriggwaspani*, and *Craigwading* have their names. Likewise *Llis* in British is a

[1] *Camb. descrip. Brit. cap. 7.*

Court or Palace, of that in Ireland you have *Lismore, Lisfenyn, Lislofty, Lismakery.* *Glan* and *Glyn* are British words, of them have you *Glangibbon, Glandeboy, Glan Reynald, Glynburry, Glyndelory, Glynmolowra, &c.* *Inis* an Iland, is British and Irish, of which kind are *Inissircan, Inisshoven, Inisdiok, Inissuag, Iniscorthie,* and the like. *Rath* a moat or round trench (whereof there are many in Ireland made by the Danes) if *Beda* had not said that it was a Saxon word, I would have said it had been British, and how many names of places are compounded with it in Ireland, were too long to rehearse. I will here give *Stanihurst* leave to conclude, *Omnes insulæ locos et lucos Wallici nominis gloria implevit; the renowne of the Welsh name* (saith he) *hath filled all the wayes and woods of the Iland.*

The British words among them are infinite, the which, as I think, the Irish have taken hold of, and have caused to vary little from their speech, for example.

British,	*Bara*	} Bread.
Irish,	*Ran*	
Br.	*Diod*	} Drink.
Ir.	*Diogh*	
Br.	*Tan*	} Fire.
Ir.	*Tine*	
Br.	*Drus*	} a Doore.
Ir.	*Dyrrus*	

Br.	*Ithyn*	Firres.
Ir.	*Ityn*	
Br.	*Mawn*	Turfe.
Ir.	*Mon*	
Br.	*Gaver*	a Goat.
Ir.	*Gawr*	
Br.	*Mawr*	Great.
Ir.	*More*	
Br.	*Myn*	a Kydde.
Ir.	*Mynan*	
Br.	*Ty*	a House in both.
Ir.		
Br.	*Scadan*	a Herring.
Ir.	*Scaddn*	
Br.	*Carregg*	in both a Rock.
Ir.		
Br.	*Teer*	land or ground.
Ir.	*Tyr*	
Br.	*Sidan*	in both Silke.
Ir		
Br.	*Kos*	in both a leg or foot.
Ir.		
Br.	*Sane*	a paire of hose or stockins.
Ir.	*Fessane*	
Br.	*Losksy* in both burning or burnt.	
Ir.		
Br.	*Berw* and *Berwy* in both sod.	
Ir.		
Br.	*Glan*	in both a like.
Ir.	*Glyn*	

	Duffrey	in both alike.
	Duffrin	
Br.	*Mah*	a sonne.
Ir.	*Mac*	
Br.	*Cuanid*	wood.
Ir.	*Cunnogh*	
Br.	*Knaie*	nuts
Ir.	*Knoe*	
Br.	*Kwyr*	wax
Ir.	*Kwyragh*	
Br.	*Cantref*	an hundred townes
Ir.	*Cantrud*	
Eng.	*Cantred*	
Br.	*Avon*	a river.
Ir.	*Owen*	

Moil in both bald.

Mantagh in both toothlesse.

And thus much of the Irish language occasioned by the history of *Gathelus* and *Scota*; now to the history, from whence I feare mee I have too long disgressed. The hard successe of *Nemedus* before spoken of, and the departure of *Gathelus* (as hath beene said) to the North-east Ilands, and North parts of Britaine, now called Scotland, moved five brethren, the sonnes of one *Dela* of the posterity of *Nemedus* being valiant men, and skilfull in the Art of Navigation, to make ready a great fleet, and to attempt the conquest of this Iland. These were, as I presently said, of the posterity of *Nemedus* and were named, *Gandius*,

Gennadius, *Sagandus*, *Rutheranius* or *Rutheragus*, and *Slanius*, of whom *Slane* hath the denomination; when they had made preparation, assembled forces, and set all in a readinesse, they hoised up saile, and in short time arrived in Ireland, about the yeere of the world 2535.

After their arrivall, and view had of the land, they found the puissance of the Chamesite Giants sore weakned through their owne civill dissention, so that with more ease then they looked for, they atchieved their purpose, wanne the whole country, utterly destroyed and rooted out that wicked generation (enemies to God and man) but spared as many as they found of *Iaphets* line, divided the Iland into five parts, and in each of them they severally reigned. This was the first division of Ireland, the discourse whereof I will referre to another place. Furthermore for the satisfaction of all parties, and perfect league to be had among these brethren, and their posterity, they concluded to fix a meare stone in the middle point of Ireland, to the which each of their kingdomes should reach, so as they might in equality partake of the commodities found in that Iland. Of these also it is said, that they invented the distribution of Shires into Cantreds, every Cantred or Barony to containe one hundred townships: but of this in another place. When they had for a certaine space seated themselves (say the Irish Antiquaries) and found warmth and wealth about them, every one began to looke big, and

grow ambitious, so that in processe of time, desire of Soverainty set the five brethren at variance, which in the end tended to their destruction. In this civill dissention it is written, that *Slanius* the yongest through the aid of some old inhabitants, got the upper hand, brought his foure brethren to a low estate, attributed unto himselfe the title of supreme honour over them, and encroched round about the middle stone and fixed meare aforesaid, for the space of certaine miles; which plot in time, obtained the priviledge and name of one entire plot, or part, and maketh up the number of five parts, into the which Ireland is commonly divided, and is called *Meth*, in Latine *Media*, and of some *Midia*, taking that name (as some haue guessed) for that in respect of the other parts, it contained but the moity of Cantreds, that is, sixteene, where each of the other contained thirty and two; or else for that it lieth in the midst of the land.

These encrochments *Slanius* annexed to his inheritance and Monarchy, which Monarchy continued thus, the space of thirty yeeres, and then *Slanius* departed this life, and was buried in a mountaine of *Meth*, that beareth hitherto the name after him. After his decease the Princes that before were subject unto him, began to gather heart, stomached the matter, and denied their obedience to his successour: whereupon ensued continuall warre amongst them, and especially about the land of *Meth*, which strife of long time could not bee appeased, yet in the space of thirty

yeeres aforesaid, of these brethren and their successors there were nine Kings. In the neck of all these mischiefes and hurlyburlies (say the Irish antiquities) there came a fleet of Scythians upon the coast, landed their men in Ireland, made claime to the land, by a title of right which they pretended from their forefather *Nemedus* (of whom mention is made before) so that by partaking with the one side and the other, all was in an uproare, havock was made on each side with fire and sword in most miserable manner. They spent themselves in pursuing one another with such outrage, that they cared not what nation, or what souldier they received to their aid, to hold up, or beat downe a side. Both the one and the other sent for aid into the Ilands now called England and Scotland, Orchades, Hebrides, &c. and acquainted forrainers with their state so farre, that they could never after be rid of them, to wit, the Britaines, till in the end they yeelded unto them the upper hand, as by conquests, in processe of the history, shall appeare. Note (gentle reader) how that hitherto, that is, the yeere of the world 2828, and before the birth of Christ 1142, these North parts of the world, as England, Scotland, Ireland, with other Iles, were possessed, commanded, and inhabited by the posterity of *Iapheţ* and *Cham*, the sonnes of *Noah*, without any speciall name given to the lands, or to the Commanders of them, otherwise then *Samothei*, *Celtæ*, *Oceanes*, *Neptunists*, and *Albions*, although I have hitherto used the names now in ure (for the plainer delivery of the history) as

if they had beene knowne before; neither were any called Scots as *Hector Boetius* would have it.

After the times of the former troubles which happened in Ireland upon the landing of the Scythians, I finde nothing of Ireland till the dayes of *Gurguntius* (the sonne of *Belinus*) who began his raine, according to the ordinary account *anno mundi* 3580, and reigned 19 yeeres over Britaine. This King after his victory atchieved in Denmark (for his tribute which they there had refused to pay him) returning back towards Britaine, met by the Iles of Orkeney, with a navy of thirthy ships (*Stanyhurst* saith 60) with men and women, whose Generall was called *Bartholin* or *Partholin;* in *Ponticus Virunius Partolom;* in *Flores Historiarum, Partholaim;* in *Gualter Oxoniensis, Bartholome;* in *Fabian, Harding, Grafton,* and *Caxton, Irlamal;* of whom they thinke the country to be called Ireland. *Gurguntius* demanded of them what they were, and the occasion of their travell, their answer was, they were Spaniards, and had long beene on the seas, seeking to finde some favourable Prince, to assigne them a place of habitation, for that their country way so populous, that it could not containe them, (others write that for some disordered parts they were banished their country) and where they found favour, they would become subiects, and hold of him as their soveraigne Lord. In this fleet with the Governor of Baion, their Generall (before named) there were foure brethren of noble birth, the sonnes

of *Milesius* (others say, *Miletus*, and others *Milo*) the two chiefe of which were called *Hiberus* and *Hermon*. And beside the former differences in the parents name, *Dowling* writeth in his Irish collections, that they were the sonnes of *Iubal*; *Hector Boetius* avoucheth they were the sonnes of *Gathelus* and *Scota*; *Stanihurst* affirmeth that *Scota* was great or old grand-dame to *Hiber* and *Hermon*, others write they were of the posterity of *Gathelus* and *Scota*, whereas *Gathelus* (if there were any such) was a Grecian, and *Scota* an Egyptian, *Hiber* and *Hermon*, Spaniards: see (gentle Reader) how these reports hang together.

Gurguntius being aduised by his Councell, pittying their necessitie and wandring estate, granted them the Iland now called Ireland, to inhabite, and that they should become tributaries to him and his successors, the Kings of Britaine for ever. For hee called to minde that the inhabitants were an unruly people, and thought by this meanes to subdue them, and quietly to enjoy his tribute; for it seemeth that the Britaines made claime to Ireland, to which effect I reade in the Book of *Houth*, that *Gurguntius* came into Ireland, and that the land many a yeare paid him truage, and to other Kings of Britaine after him; but as oft as they put foote in the land, they got more knocks then pence, saith an Irish Chronicler. The King of Britaine hastening homeward, gave them Pilots, and safe conductors for their arrivall and possession of the land.

Hiberus and *Hermon* after their arivall, by the assent of all their associates, divided the land betweene them; the North to *Hiber*, and the South to *Hermon*. But ambition, the mother of mischiefe, would not long suffer them to enjoy peace, but rent their hearts with fierie dissention, inflamed their mindes to desire one Soueraigne and absolute commander over the whole land; they gather forces, they muster their men, they put on Armes, and to battaile they goe, in which field *Hiberus* was slaine, (though *Hector Boetius* write, that he went into Spaine to succeed his father) and *Hermon* became Monarch of all Ireland. *Hermon* being thus sole ruler and governour, to avoid the murmure of his people, and euill opinion (in a manner) of all men conceiued against him, and peaceably to governe the land, fell to purge himselfe, and caused the occasion of the warres to be proclaimed, that he bore armes against his naturall brother, not of malice or desire of soveraigntie, but in defence of his owne person, and safety of his people; and for proofe, that his heart was farre from desire to rule alone, he appointed certaine Captaines, as Kings, to command under him certaine Countries, reserving unto himselfe, one fourth part, and the Country of Meth annexed to the Monarchie, for the better maintenance of his princely estate.

By this meanes, this Realme of Ireland in processe of time, grew to five kingdomes; the first Leinster, on the East side or quarter, called in Latine *Lagenia*, and

in Irish, *Cuige-Laghen.* The second, Conaght, on the west side of the kingdome, called in Latine *Connacia,* and in Irish, *Cuige-Chonoght.* The third, Vlster, which is the North part of Ireland, named in Latine, *Vltonia,* and in Irish, *Cuigh-Vlladh* The fourth, Mounster, South and South-west, in Latine, *Momonia,* and in the country speech, *Cuige Mughan.* The fift and last, a plotte defalked from these parts, called Meth, comprising (as they are now called) as well East-Meth as West-Meth, in Latine, *Midia,* or *Media,* in Irish, *Mhidhe.* And here must not bee forgotten, that there hath beene in these kingdomes great change and alteration by usurping and compounding among themselves, and by dividing of countries, as we finde Mounster was into two parts, and since have beene there great Earles, deriving their names of Mounster, *Ormond* in Irish, *Oirther Mughane, Desmond* in Irish, *Deasmughain,* and *Thomond,* in Irish, *Tuathmughain,* the which an Italian comming into Ireland, meruailed at, when he inquired what great men dwelled in the land, for he understood *Ormond,* to bee *orbis mundi,* the round world; *Desmond, decem mundi,* ten worlds; *Thomond, duo mundi,* two worlds, *profecto,* said he, *Valdè gloriosi tituli,* assuredly these are very glorious titles. So were there also in processe of time, diuers other lesser kingdomes, as by the processe of the historie will very well appeare. And here for this time leaving to discourse farther of the Irish kingdomes, I conclude with this one remembrance, that from time to time there was

one chosen to be chiefe soveraigne Monarch ouer them all; and the number of Monarchs from *Hermon* to *Laogirius*, the sonne of *Nealus Magnus*, (that is, great *Neale*) in whose time *S. Patricke* converted them to Christianitie, amounteth to an hundred thirty and one.

And now backe againe to the historie where we left. It is said that of *Hiber* or *Hiberus*, (who was slaine, as hath aboue beene recorded) Ireland was called *Hibernia;* certaine it is with the concordance of most and the best antiquaries, that the land was not called *Hibernia*, neither right Spaniard arived here before the daies of *Gurguntius*. Divers writers haue diversly delivered the originall name of the land, some corruptly, some poetically, some etymologically. Ierna, Iuvernia, Ibernia, Overnia, Vernia, Iris; of the Britaines, Ywerdhon, of the Irish themselues Erin, and tooke that name of *Fin Erin*, (of whom at large in the booke of *Houth*) of the Saxons and English it is called Ireland, that is, the land of *Erin*. All these names originally grew of *Hiberus* the Spaniard, or in remembrance of *Iberus* the second King of Spaine; who was the sonne of *Tuball*, the fift sonne of *Iaphet*. *Annius Viterbiensis* writeth, that of this King, the river is called *Iberus amnis*, *Spaine Iberia*, and the inhabitants about the river, *Iberi*. [k] This land of Ireland hath also beene called *Scotia Major*, (Scotland the greater) after the birth of Christ, but that came of corrupting the word Scytha, as I said before.

[k] *Stainhurst de reb. Hib. pa.* 17.

Lastly, it hath beene called Banno of the Poets or Bardes of the lands: *Stainihurst* thinketh it was so called of the Banne, a river in the County of Weixford, the place is now called Bagganbun, where the Britaines vpon the conquest arived, and thereof is the rime,

At the creeke of Bagganbun,
Ireland was ylost and wonne.

But for this ancient name Banno and other the like which the Poets of Ireland haue in use, I referre the courteous reader to learned *Camden,* [l] in his treatise of Ireland, about the beginning.

Lanquet in his collections of antiquities, noteth that the Scottish historiographers about the yeere of the world, 3652. beginne their histories at *Fergus,* the sonne of *Ferquhard,* King of Ireland, that he should come with great power out of Ireland, to their aide against the Pictes, [m] and that they fauoured him so much, that they chose him King, and that hee raigned ouer them in Scotland 25. yeeres, and how that in his raigne hee slue *Coile,* King of Britaine, at what time by generall consent, there was no Scottish man then commanding in Albania, no Pict at that time seene in Britaine or Ireland, nor *Coile* King of Britaine in many yeares after. I am of *Lanquets* opinion, thus he

[l] *Camden in Hebernia.*

[m] *Anno mundi,* 3652.

writeth, *These histories of the Scots, as they set them forth, bee full of errors, and agree with none other historians.* Notwithstanding this *Item* may not stoppe the course of the historie, and therefore whether he came out of *Ireland,* (as we here take it) or out of Denmarke, (as some haue thought) well he might be King of Albania, for so was it then called, and not Scotland, and so from him I will terme them Kings of Albania, untill I finde the name *Scoti* knowne amongst forraigne writers.

This *Fergus* (saith *Buchanan*) hauing orderly disposed of his affaires in Albania, went into Ireland to pacifie and quiet troubles there risen, and hoising saile for his returne into Albania, he and all his company were cast away in a tempest vpon the rocks at a place of him now called in the British and Irish tongues Karregfergus, or Craigfregus (corruptly in English, Knockfergus.) It is written that he advanced in his banner, a red Lyon Rampant, with his taile folden toward his backe, as it were moved with anger, the which his successors since have used. After this his infortunate decease, there rose great strife about the succession, his two sonnes, *Ferlegus* and *Mainus* were young, and many exceptions were made against them, in the end, the two sonnes were put beside, and the eldest of the sept (after the *Irish* Tanistrie) tooke place, which fell upon *Feritharis* an Irish man, brother to *Fergus.* And this Tanistrie continued (saith *Buchanan*) unto *Kenathus* 3. during the raigne of

fourescore Kings. But I must leave them, and follow onely what concerneth *Irish* businesse.

About the yeere of the world, saith *Lanquet*, 3750. and odde (not allowing as he protested before, but following the Scottish histories, one *Reuthar*, commander of the invaders in Albania, (now called Scotland) was vexed with civill warres, and by the Britaines, banished into Ireland, where hee lived twelve yeeres. See more of him in *Hector Boetius*, and *Buchanan*. The 9. King *Albaniensium Scotorum*, (so *Stanihurst* calleth them) was *Iosina Thereus*, and is the next that seemeth to haue any right or interest in the Irish historie. This man was bred and brought up in Ireland, and favoured the nation (saith *Bale*) [n] above all others; he sought peace of all men, honoured Chirurgions, Physitians and Druydes of Ireland; raigned 24 yeeres, and so ended his dayes.

The next that concerneth our purpose, is *Gillus* the usurper, who through much treason, and many murthers, aspiring to the Crowne of Albania, and deservedly falling into the hatred and mislike of all his subjects, was at length forced by his Nobles, (who rose in Armes against him) to take a fisher-boate and flee into Ireland, where hee was promised aide; but to prevent further mischiefe, one *Cadall* is appointed generall of an Armie, to pursue the tyrant into Ireland, and meeting him in the field, drove *Gillus* to flee.

[n] *Io. Bale cent*, 14.

When the Irish men had forsaken him, he hid himselfe in a denne, invironed with woods and bogs, where shortly after, an Irish Kerne, for reward, found him out, cut off his head, and brought it to *Cadall*, after he had tyrannized three yeeres. He was the thirteenth King of Albania.

In the time of *Augustus Cæsar*, a little before the birth of our Saviour, *Fridelenus* King of Denmarke, puffed vp with pride, through some fortunate successes, arrived in Ireland, laid siege to the Citie of Dublin, and finding it not so easie a matter to atchieue, fell to policie; he caught certaine Swallowes that bred in the Citie, tyed fire to their wings, who flying to their nests, fired the houses; while the Citizens endevoured to quence the fire, the Danes entred the Citie, and wanne it.

The King of Leinster after this, gathered forces, and gave the Danes battaile, in which, many fell on both sides; *Fredelnus* seeing the enemy increase, and his armie decrease, fled the land, and retired into his country. His sonne *Frotho*, the third of that name, King of Danes (so *Albertus Krantzius*, [o] and *Saxo Grammaticus* record) wantonly assailed the Britaines, (*lustrans magis insulam quam subigens*) rather taking a view of the Iland, then subduing it, afterward

[o] *Alb. Krant. Dan. lib.* 1. *cap.* 3 2. *Saxo Gr. hist. Dan. lib.* 5.

relinquishing that course, put foot in Ireland. The historiographers of that side, report hardly of the land, and the inhabitants thereof, and in fine they write, when *Cepo* the Irish King was overthrowne and put to flight, his brother *Kervill* (saith *Saxo*, I take it to be *O Carroll)* offered tribute, wherewith the Danes being pacified, returned to their Country. This *Frotho* peopled the Orchades with Danes, and appointed *Revillus* their commander.

Whilst this *Frotho* King of Danes was Monarch of Ireland, the light of the world, the comfort of all Christians, IESVS CHRIST the sonne of GOD was borne in the flesh.

About 44: yeere after the incarnation of our Lord, *Claudius* [p] the Emperor having appeased the troubles of Britaine by the aide of *Arviragus*, (as *Mathew Westmonasteriensis* saith) subdued Orchades, Hebrides, Thule, and all the Ocean Islands, among the which, Ireland is reconed, the which *Beda* [q] and and *Eutropius* haue likewise remembred. But *Fabian*, *Grafton*, *Holinshed*, and *Ponticus Virunius* say further, that he sent certaine legions of Knights into Ireland to subdue the same; what successe they had, is not recorded, a legion consisting of 6666. (as

[p] *Claudius. Arviragus. Flor. histor.*

[q] *Beda eccles. hist. Angl. lib.* 1. *c.* 3. *Eutropius rerum Rom. lib.* 8.

ancient Writers record) no doubt they performed some great exploit. Learned *Camden* [r] writeth of the Brigantes (the inhabitants of Yorkeshire, Lancashire, the Bishopricke of Durham, Westmerland and Cumberland were so called) how that in the time of *Claudius* (as I take it) many of them went to end their dayes in Ireland, and of old were called the Brigantes of Ireland. His words are these, *Quod verò Florianus Del Campo Hispanus, nostros Brigantes, &c. Whereas* Florianus Del-Campo *the Spaniard, hath somewhat arrogantly derived our Brigantes from Spaine into Ireland, and thence into Britaine, being aided by no other conjecture, but that he found in his Country of Spaine, the Citie Brigantia; I feare mee hee hath fouly deceived himselfe. For if the like cause have not given ours and Brigantes of Ireland the same name, I had rather be of opinion with my most learned friend* Thomas Savill, *namely, that certaine Brigantes and other nations of Britaine also, even from the comming of the Romans into Britaine departed into Ireland, some for quietnesse sake, and to liue at ease, some for that their eyes should not be infected with the sight of the Roman dominions, and last of all others, lest in their latter age they should willingly seeme to lose the libertie which from nature they had received in their youth. And that Claudius the Emperour, first of any Romane tooke the Bri-*

[r] *Camden pa.* 557.

gantes in hand, and subjected them to his Empire and command: Seneca *sheweth in these his verses.*

..... Ille Britannos
Vltra noti littora ponti, & cæruleos
Scuta Brigantes, dare Romulæis colla catenis
Iussit,.....

The Britaines farre from knowne seas,
and Brigantes Bucklers blue,
The Roman *Claude* to Roman becke
did bring, and rebels slue.

Claudius hauing effected all his affaires, (as formely hath been delivered) returned to Rome: then saith *Gualter Oxen. Omnia regna Arvirago tradidit, he delivered all these kingdomes to Arviragus.* He committed them al to his charge, saith *Ponticus Virunius*, In *Matthew Westmonsteriensis* I reade, *regimen insulare Arvirago cessit, the command of the Ilands fell to Arviragus.* *Harding* hath delivered it in verse.

Orchades Isles in the meane time he conquered,
In which he infeoffed the King, and him preferred.

About this time, *Frotho*[s] the fourth of that name, King of Danes, (some 30. yeeres after the former

[s] *Saxo Gram. hist. Dan. lib.* 6. *Albertus Krantz Dan. lib.* 1.

invasion, saith mine Author) sent great power of Giants out of Denmarke, under the leading of bloudy *Haco*, and the great challenger and huge monster *Starcuterus*, to invade Ireland. The occasion was as followeth: *Starcuterus* (before mentioned) being borne farre in the East by reason of shipwracke, having lost both his ship and fellowes, was cast upon the coast of Denmarke, and hearing of the fame of *Frotho*, came to his Court. This Giant was greatly admired for stature and strength of body. *Frotho* commanded a great navie to be in a readinesse, with all manner of necessary provision, made him an arch-pirate, and turned him to the Sea to seeke adventures. They touched many lands, and fought with many Giants, at length (saith mine Author) that no Country, though never so remote, should bee freed from the smart of Danish forces, they arived in Ireland. *Huglet*, King of Ireland, gave them battaile, in the which, *Huglet* was slaine, and all the Irish put to flight. And yet mine Author, though a Dane, highly commendeth two Irish Lords, *Segathus* and *Suibdanus*, the one wounded *Haco*, the other gave *Starcuterus* such a blow, that he stood a great while amazed, and had beene slaine, had he not beene rescued. The battaile being ended, the Danes tooke (Dufflinian) Dublin, ransacked it, and found great store of treasure, and some of them remained in the land, the rest returned to Denmarke, *Starcuterus* went into forraigne countries to combat with Giants.

In the time of *Arviragus* before mentioned, I finde the greatest probability of the first comming of the Pictes out of Scythia, first into Ireland, secondly, into Albania, now called Scotland, and lastly, into the North of England. And whereas before (page 6.) I made mention of the arivall of Scythians, *Nemedus* and his foure sonnes, and after them of five brethren of their posteritie, and the third time of another fleete of Scythians that arived in Ireland; and that also by many antiquities it appeareth that the Scots be Scythians, and came out of those parts whence these Pictes brake forth; I purpose now to make a more full discourse of that businesse.

Camden modestly confesseth he knoweth not when they came first into these parts, neither doe *I* mislike with his conjecture, that they should be old Britaines, who painted themselves, to shew more terrible against the Romanes: yet we must confesse, that there are many nations of severall names in Scythia, and *Polychronicon*, together with *Rastall*, saith, that the Gothes and Pictes be one nation. The etymologie *I* finde in the storie of the Gothes: *Scythia in the Gothicke* [t] *tongue, signifieth a skilfull archer.* And these Pictes brought with them the use of darts, which the Irish retaine to this day. But *I* come to *Beda*, [u] who goeth

[t] *Io. Magnus Goth. Hist. lib.* 1 *cap.* 27

[u] *Beda eccles. hist. gentis Aug lib.* 1 *cap.* 1

plaine to worke. *When the Britaines (saith hee) had possessed the greatest part of the Isle, beginning at the South, it happened that a nation of Pictes out of Scythia, with long shippes, (yet not many) entred the Ocean, the winde driving them about, beyond all the coast of Brittaine, they came into Ireland, and arived in the North, and finding there the nation of Scots, desired of them to grant them a dwelling place amongst them, but they could not obtaine it, &c. The Scots made answere that the Iland could not hold them both, but wee can give you (saith they) good counsaile what you may doe. We know another Island not farre from ours, reaching to the East, the which we are wont oft to discerne in cleare dayes; if you will goe thither, you may make it your dwelling place, or if any withstand you, take vs for your aide. And so the Pictes sayling into Britaine, began to inhabite the North parts of the Iland, for the Britaines held the South. And when the Pictes had no wives, and sought them of the Scots, they were granted them, onely upon this condition, that when the title of Soveraigntie became doubtfull, they should choose them a King rather of the Feminine bloud royall, then of the Masculine, the which unto this day is observed amongst the Pictes. And in processe of time, Britaine after the Britaines and Picts, received that third nation of the Scots upon that part, where the Pictes had their habitation, who issuing out of Ireland with their Captaine Reuda, either by loue or by the sword, have wonne peculiarly unto themselves those seats which they hold unto this*

day, and of this their captaine they are called Dalreudin, *for in their language,* (Dal) *signifieth a part.*

And here I cannot but meruaile at *Hector Boetius* and *Buchanan,* [v] what confusion they bring into the historie, without regard of the truth, they name *Beda,* they call *Reuda, Reuther,* and say that he was the sixt King of Albania, and that the Britaines made him flee into Ireland, and that in the end he was restored to his kingdome againe; which can no way agree with the words of reverend *Beda,* whose credit we may not impeach, for he saith, they were Scythians, and wanted a dwelling place, and beganne to inhabit the North parts of the Iland. If *Reuda* were King of Albania, no thanke to the Irish men to direct him thither. But let us goe on with the Pictes.

I finde in *Lanquet* that the Pictes were rebellious, *an.* 9: of *Arviragus, Anno. Domini* 53. And *Polycronicon* affircteth, [w] as *Beda* wrote before, that they came to the North of Ireland in *Vespasians* time. *Stow* saith it was in *Anno* 73. *Matthew* the Monke of Westminster, in *Anno* 75. and 76. *Leslæus* and *Bozius* write that *Reuda* came about the yeere 360. which is very doubtfull, and that then the Pictes wanting wives, desired of the Britaines that they might match with their nation, their suit being denied, they

[v] *Hect. Boet. Scot. hist. lib.* 4.

[w] According to the Text of Sir James Ware. EDITOR.

went to the Irish, who granted them wives upon the condition in *Beda* before rehearsed And farther, *Giraldus Cambrensis*, *Polycronicon* and *Grafton* concurring, doe say, that Scotland was first called Albania of *Albanactus*, secondly, Pictlandia, of the Pictes; thirdly, Hibernia, Ireland, because of the alliance or affinitie in marriage betweene the Pictes and Irish; last of all, Scotland or Scythians land. And hereof it commeth to passe, that Ireland is called Scotland, and Scotland Ireland, the Irish Scots, and the Scots Irish, [x] as one hath largely collected; and the distinction of *Scotia Major*, and *Scotia Minor*

Harding hath an historie out of *Mewinus* a Brittish Chronicler, (*Harding* lived in the time of *Henry* the fift and sixt, and in the daies of *Edward* the fourth,) which if it be true, all that is formerly spoken of *Gathelus* and *Scota* his wife, by the Scottish and Irish Chroniclers, is of small credit; namely, how that *Gathelus* and *Scota* came into these North parts, together with the Pictes. *Anno Domini* 75. his words are these, speaking of the King of Britaine.

Then to the Peights left alive, he gave Catenesse
To dwell upon, and have in heritage;
Which wedded were with Irish as I gesse,
Of which after Scots came on that linage,

[x] *Polychron lib. 1, cap. 37.*

For Scots be to say their language
A collection of many into one,
Of which the Scots were called so anone.

But Mewinus [y] *the Bryton Chronicler*
Saith in his Chronicle otherwise,
That Gadelus *and* Scota *in the yeere*
Of Christ, seventie and five by assise,
At Stone inhabite as might suffice:
And of her name, the country round about,
Scotland she cald that time without doubt.

This Scota *was, as* Mewin *saith the sage,*
Daughter and bastard of King Pharao *that day,*
Whom Gadele *wedded, and in his old age*
Vnto a land he went, where he inhabited ay,
Which yet of his name is called Gadelway;
And with the Peights he came into Albanie
The yeere of Christ aforesaid openlie, &c.

Polycronicon [z] and *Cambrensis* accord with *Harding* in this point, that the King gave the Pictes a place to dwell in, which is now called Galleway. And saith *Ponticus Virunius*, it was desert and waste, where none dwelled in many dayes before. The credit of *Harding* is great, and he that list to know farther of

[y] *Flor. hist. Mewinus* was also called *Melkinus. Io. Bale cent.* 1: *cap.* 57. wrote his life. The stone Regall of Scotland.

[z] *Pol. lib.* 1. *cap.* 58.

him, let him reade *Bale*, [a] Bishop of Ossorie, who wrote his life.

I will now neither confirme nor confute, but acquainte the reader with such antiquities as I finde, and in a word, to adde something unto that which went before, of the time of the Pictes comming into these North, and North-west parts. *Florilegus* writeth it was *Anno Domini* 77. *Functius* and *Polydore*, *Anno Dom.* 87. To reconcile the dissonance, what every one saith may stand for truth, for they came in severall companies, and at severall times, some into Ireland, some into Albania, and some into England. I will from henceforward leave writing the kingdome of Albania, and write the kingdome of Scotland.

Anno Dom. 73. began *Marius* the sonne of *Arviragus* to raigne in Britaine, (*Humfrey Lloide* calleth him *Meurig*) who after his troublesome warres, for nine yeeres space against the Picts and Scots, ended with the helpe of *Iulius Agricola*, is said to have aspired towards Ireland, and to have placed garrisons on the coast; and to the end he might performe some exploite there, entertained an Irish Prince that was driven out of his country by civill dissention for his conductor. I finde no issue recorded of this businesse.

In the 15. yeeres civill warres [b] which ensued vpon

[a] *Io. Bale. Script. Brytan. centur.* 8. [b] *Galf. Mon.*

the death of *Lucius*, the sonne of *Coile*, King of Britaine, it is reported, that *Fulgenius* called the Ilanders, Albanians, Pictes, and Irish men to his aide, against whom, *Severus* the Emperour comming from Rome, gave them battaile neere unto Yorke, where *Severus* and a Prince of Ireland were slaine, and *Fulgenius* deadly wounded; the Emperour *Severus* and the Irish Prince, lye buried at Yorke.

In the antiquities of Ireland, I finde that about the dayes of *Constantine* the great, who beganne his raigne *anno Dom.* 310.) one *Realmond* King of Vlster, fell in love with a lady of Leinster, who had beene wife to the King of Connaught, a woman (they say) of meane stature, but of singular beautie; when many Princes and Lords of Ireland laboured to winne her fauour, her answer was, that none should enjoy her loue, but a Champion that by Marshall prowesse had prevailed in forraigne countries, quitted himselfe like a man, wonne the Garland, and brought tribute with him to his native soile. *Realmond* being overcome with the love of this Lady, hoised up saile and went for France, where he encountred with a Champion, and wonne a Garland called Civica. Afterward comming to Great Britain, hee challenged the Duke of Cornewall, and got of him a tribute, thence he went into Scotland, and encountred with Gyant *Castreus*, and prevailed; (such was the manner of winning honour and dignity by marshall feates in those daies, saith *Saxo Gramma-*

ticus [c]) last of all he came backe to Ireland, and acquainted his love, the Lady he formerly sought for, with his travaile, his dangerous adventures, and his good successe, and now having prevailed abroad, hee doubted not at home in regard of his kingdome, his kindred and valour, but to obtaine her fauour. Shee being made thoroughly acquainted with his affaires abroad and at home, gave many a sigh in his absence, fearing some mischance might come to him, and wishing she had not so peremptorily answered him; but he no sooner came in place, but she relented from her former hardnesse, and with all speed the solemnity of marriage was performed. But the match was disdained by others, insomuch that he was hated of the Princes and Nobilitie of Ireland, who had formerly affected the Lady, whereof grew mutinies, contentions, and at last open warre, and hee finding himselfe weake, in comparison of his enemies, was forced to flee into Denmarke, where hee found favour and great aide of worthy Souldiers which came with him into Ireland, where he and his generation, together with the Danes and their posteritie, effected many notable acts, and continued many yeeres.

The Danes of the lyne of *Fin Eryn*, that came out of Denmarke, were these, *David* the Kings sonne who had to his sonne borne in Ireland, *Deure Dove*, who had foure sonnes, *Covrry*, *Boyskene*, *Fyagh*, and

[c] *Sax. Gram. hist. Dan. lib. 7.*

Oghe; *Boyskene* had a sonne called *Garreneslo*, and *Con-Caghmore* was his sonne; *Con* had a sonne named *Ferrelogh*, and he had a sonne called *Trenmore*, this *Trenmore* had to his sonne, *Coylle Negoe*, and he had a sonne called *Fin-Fa*, alias *Fin Mac Coylle*, and he had a sonne caled *Oshen*, and he had a sonne called *Osker*. This *Oshen* lived in *Anno Dom.* 432. in the dayes of Saint *Patricke*, unto whom he made relation of many things before going, and was by him baptized, being of the age of seven score yeeres. For proofe of this historie, I finde in *Saxo Grammaticus* that wrote the historie of the Danes, that *Fin* and *Finni* were a great sept there, hardy, stalworth men, given to preying, and burning of towne and country, and happly the Irish conversing with them, did learne those parts of them) and that the name of *Eric* was of the royall bloud among them; so *Fin Erin* turning *c.* into *n.* was a great commander there, and conducted into Ireland many Danes. And happly, Ireland of old, because of his great command, and his posteritie, might after him be called *Erin:* this is but my conceit, happly others can say more thereof. These Danes increased and multiplied exceedingly, and became great Commanders and Captaines over the whole land, and tooke vpon them the defence thereof against all forraigne invasion. In processe of time fell out the battaile of Feutra in Mounster, valiantly fought by the Irish and Danes, whereof the Irish Chroniclers make great accompt; it was fought chiefly in Mounster, by the Princes and power of Ireland, with the aide of

the Danes, and generation of *Fin Mac Coylle*, and *Fin Eryn*, in which field, they say, all the forraigne enemies that came out of Scotland, Cornewall, Normandie, Germany, Spaine and Denmarke it selfe, were overthrowne. The occasion was as followeth.

Many Gyants and worthy Champions there were in those daies in Ireland, of Irish and Danish birth, hired by them for their defence; these trauelling into forraine countries, fought many combats, and got yeerely tribûte unto their country, as the manner then was among such challengers. For this they were generally envied, and a day was appointed by the invaders to arrive together in Ireland to ouer-runne the country, and roote out the whole nation. The first company to the number of thirtie thousand, landed at the Derrie, where *Conkedagh* one of the Princes of the North, being prepared for them, by a sleight, set their shipping on fire, and met with them in a place where they were all overthrowne, so that with their Armes, those among the Irish that formerly wanted, were furnished and made fit for the warres. The second company of this combination came to Lambay, landed their men at the Follesse of Skerries, set their men in battaile array, and marched to a place now called Cnoc-nagean, that is the hill of dead mens heads, where *Dermotte Lamhdhearg* King of Leinster met them, fought a cruell battaile with equall fortune for the space of foure daies; the Irish by reason of the spoile and victory got at the former battaile,

were mightily encouraged, and also the milke and fresh meate which the country yeelded them, and the strangers wanted, made them the more able to fight; to be short, the strangers were overthrowne, and thirty sixe thousand of them slaine, whose Armes furnished Ireland throughly to encounter with the rest of the combination.

The third company came to Fentra in Mounster, where the forces of Ireland being gathered together, kept them from landing the space of seven dayes, with the slaughter of many on both sides, so that the sea-shore at sundry times was died redde with the bloud of the slaine karkasses, untill that one *Gille-more*, sonne to the King of Thomond, (being male-content for that he was remoued from the voward of the battaile to the rere) revolted, and by night stole to the enemie, and directed them where they should safely land their men, which accordingly came to passe, so that the Irish knew it not untill the strangers had set their owne shippes on fire: hee withall brought the invaders to such advantage of ground, that they refreshed themselues for ten dayes without any annoyance from the Irish, and afterward when they came to skirmish, did himselfe divers times fight valiantly, imbruing his hands in the bloud of his owne naturall countrimen. At last it fell out after some bickering, that hee called for water to wash his hands that were all full of the bloud of his countrymen, which was left stand after he had therein washed,

and soone after calling for a cup of wine, was answered that there stood a bowle of wine upon the table; he forgetting that he had formerly washed therein, dranke it up, insomuch, that the standers by said; *What fellow is this, more like a brute beast then a man, that drinketh his owne bloud, and eateth his owne flesh? Gillemore* hearing this, tooke it to heart, notwithstanding dissembling his griefe and anger, the next night conveyed himselfe away, and submitting himselfe to his father, delivered unto him the state of the strangers, which turned to their great disadvantage and hinderance.

Shortly after, the day of battaile was appointed, where the strangers were overthrowne, and (as they say) seven score thousand men slaine. The Irish had supplies and extraordinary meanes at home, the strangers could not come by it; the Irish plaid with them at all advantages, the woods and the bogs defended them as occasion served. This battaile with the preambles and circumstances, continued one whole yeere, the strangers had no shipping to flee unto for succour, the ground was unknowne unto them, their lodging and fare was cold, hard, and scant, so as their hardinesse could not hold out, their end was lamentable, and the honour was bequeathed to the Irish nation. The Princes of Ireland having thus with great succesſe foiled their enemies, delivered their people from utter overthrow, and quieted the land, rested themselves a while. Afterward, partly for recompence of

good service, and partly for safegard of the land, appointed the Danes (whom they had formerly hired, who also unto that time had served them truely) over the whole land to prevent forraigne invasion, forewarned by the field of Fentra and the former attempts; these Commanders with their particular places of command, I thought good to impart to the courteous reader.

Osker Mac Oshen Mac Fin with his Souldiers kept the haven of Dublin.
Fian Mac Fenrasse kept the Winde-gates.
Wony Etagh Mac Cas Foule kept Wicklo.
Creyon Mac Wony kept Arcklow.
Eye Onagh Mac Kellen kas kept Weixford.
Dono Mac Kayder kept Rosse.
Fellum Mac Eye Keyge kept Dungarvan.
Bresell Mac Eydow kept O Keylle.
Gaero Mac Doheyere kept Corke.
Ollen Aye Nyarg Mac Bressell kept Kynsale.
Collo Mac Keilt kept Dingle Koysse.
Con Keor Mac Bren Mac Foyll kept Fentra.
Osker Mac Cromkeyn kept Trallie.
Don Dowe Mac Reymowre being a King over the sept of Fin Mac Koyle kept Lymnagh, that is, Limericke.
Eye Boge Mac Fin kept Inyskagh.
Coll Kroytt kept Corke Vaysken.
Eye Mac Sroy kept Canborne.
Eye clone Drylinge kept Donrys O veyragh.

Bressell Mac Eye Begge kept Galloway.
Deyre Dovenagh Magher Morne, kept Inysbresyn.
Eye O row Mac Fin kept Kleere.
Collow Daver kept small Iland.
Enos Dayrk kept Koymaghtbe.
Enos Maygh Ercoipie kept Galley.
Feartagh Mac Ferolagh kept Moyc.
Low Magh Mac Karbren kept Sligo.
Smerger Drought kept Bondroys.
Keyll Croagh Kede Gonagh O Navnyd, Assero.
Brasell Mac Doyer kept Donagall.
Mogh Small Mac Smoyll kept Fanyd.
Eey Mac Kehow kept Loughfoyle.
Darawryd Rowrer kept Bonban.
Sperenagh Claw kept Knockfergus.
Magh love kept Ard olloe.
Donogh Mac Dermotte Evne, kept Ardglas.
Art Oge Mac Morne kept Dondorme.
Eye Mac Carra Meyke Morne kept Carlingford.
Flaas Fere Leyfroke Greffey Fin Mac Koyll, kept Don dalke.
Rey ne Roysklaygh Mac Fin Mac Koyll kept Drogheda.
Shealvagh Mac Dermotte Doyn kept Gormanston.
Covuloe Mac Wowdyrge kept Irelands eye.
Derlleys Mac Dovgar kept Howth.

These were the chiefe Commanders by direction from *Fin Mac Koyll*, who tooke farther order that Beacons should be set up in sundry places of the land,

where in time of danger they might have direction for reliefe, and draw to a head for their defence; which order continued unto the field of Kaghcaro, otherwise called Ardkagh or Ardkath, the occasion whereof was as followeth.

In the time of *Karbre Lifeacher*, Monarch of Ireland, the Danish Captaines with their bands and garrisons, waxed insolent and outragious, they weighed not what Prince or people said, they grew strong and rich, not caring what they did: they brought vp fond customes of their owne devising, oppressing the people, and disdaining the gentle admonitions of the Kings and Nobilitie of the land. Among themselves they decreed, that no Maid should marry without their license, that none should hunt the Hare, Otter, Foxe, Wolfe, Marterne or Deare, but should pay them what they pleased to rate it at, and that none should use any other pastime without their privitie. The Kings and Nobilitie of the land called a Parliament, endevouring to reforme these abuses, charging them to surcease from their outrages, or to leave the land. The Danes answered, that they came in with the sword, held by the sword, and with the sword they would be driven away. The day of battaile was appointed to be fought at Amaghery Ongallin, now called Margallin in Westmeath, though the field be called Ardkagh, which is by interpretation, a set field.

The Danes sent to Denmarke, intimating their

griefe and lamentable estate, craving aide of the King, and that he would be pleased to send his sonne to be their Generall, who (according to their request) shortly after landed with tenne thousand stalworth souldiers (so the old phrase runneth) and they comming together, made up twenty and eight thousand, and seven hundred. The Kings of Ireland with their forces were threescore and five thousand. The Danes or Norwegians being valiant and venterous, hastened to the battaile at the day appointed. The Kings in like sort with their forces hearing that their enemies approched, set themselves in battaile array, and came to a place where they all kissed the ground, readie to dye one with another, and gave (after their manner) such a crie, as if heauen and earth met together, and therewith somewhat amazed their enemies, so that the place to this day is called Balle-Nangartha, in English, Garrestowne.

The strangers placed themselves on the South-west side of the hill, that the forces of the Kings being on the other side, somewhat beneath them, might not easilie discrie their Armie; they appointed their worst men for their Rereward, that seeing the Voward valiantly encountring and prevailing, they might thereby be the more encouraged. They placed their rascals on their jades, nagges and labouring garrons, on the top of an hill, where at this day is a little Mote in remembrance thereof, giuing them in charge, that when the forces of the land espied them, and drew

neere, they should retire to the maine battaile for refuge and succour; they hoped by these meanes, that the Kings when they saw so great a company flee, would breake their order and array to pursue them, and so lay themselves open to utter ouerthrow; and then was their intent to have made the King of Denmarkes sonne, King of the land, and to have enioyed the Realme to them and their posteritie for euer.

The Kings of Ireland being seven in number, tracing a while on the top of an hill (which therefore was called after that, the hill of Trase, now Hol-trase) divided themselves into two battailes. *Gillemore, O Connor Dunnes*, sonne of *Connaght* (one that had stood out in rebellion against the Kings untill that time) had in the Voward the leading of the light footmen, whereof they made least account; he therby to winne their favours, and they to hazard him first. *Dermotte Lamhdhearg*, King of Lëinster had the charge of the horsemen; their bonnys were double armed, well appointed, active and venturous souldiers. *Dermot* being well mounted, got him to an advantage of ground, and turned him to the armie with this speech.

My friends and fellowes in Armes, whose great valour hath been oft tryed; understand (I beseech you) the cause of this battaile. Whereas heretofore we have sought out these, and hired them in our warres for our defence and good of our country, against our

forraine enemies, to be at our service and command, they have committed all manner of outrage against vs, and extortion upon the people of this land; they abused our wives, ravished our widowes, defloured our daughters and maidens; their meate, their drinke, their bedding, will not content them, but they must have money for eating, drinking and sleeping. Where they should have beene our true and dutifull seruitors, they disdained the Princes of the land, and made the people their villaines. By maintaining of them, wee made our country men idle and unapt for the warres, by inriching of them we have beggered our selves, and now see the villany of these verlates, our provision, our furniture, our Armes, and forces of our native soile, they bend against us, and not onely this, but they have drawne to their present aide, afresh, both Danes and Norwegians. Wherefore plucke up your hearts, quitte your selues like men, our cause is good, wee fight for our selves, our wives and children, and the libertie of our country; if we lose, we are lost for euer, and our children become bondslaues, and our country subiect to these bloudy rascall strangers.

He had no sooner ended his speech, but they all kissed the ground, and gave a terrible shout, that the woods about them rang thereat. On the other side, one *Osker Mac Oshen*, experienced in the warres, and bold of speech, craved of the Danes and Norweyes libertie to speake, and began as followeth.

My masters and fellowes, the cause of this our assemblie is knowne unto you; it is to maintaine that which we honourably wonne in the field, and was granted our ancestors and their posteritie, the which we have in writing to shew, under the hands and seales of the ancestors of these faithlesse Kings and Princes that be in Armes against us. There is no haven, creeke or port in Ireland, but that our predecessors and we tooke the charge of them, since our first arrivall here out of Denmarke, and valiantly defended them maugre the beards of all forraigne enemies. We fought many a battaile for them, wee wanne them tributes, and procured them discharge of tributes, the which forraigne champions in combats had obtained of them, and now for recompence, they endevour eyther to banish us the land, or put us to the sword. Will yee understand what they are, surely a people that keepe no promise with us, therefore we doubt not but the better to speed: and excepting a few of their Princes and Gentlemen that are valiant men indeed, and daily exercised in feats of Armes, the rest are but pesants, poore and needy slaues, bare arst, bare legd, and bare footed, and of small strength. For Armes, they weare a skull, a sword by their side hanging in a Wyth that compasseth their middle, and a Target; othersome have darts; the best thing in them is, they are swift of foot, & I hope we shal speedily have the experience of that when we see them run away. Their good meate & best drink we took, and made them fast,

their treasure we tooke to furnish us in apparell and Armes, and left tkem unfurnished and bare, their bedding wee had, and made them lye on the ground, their wives, widdowes and maides were at our command to keepe us warme in the night, and we gave them leave to lye among their swine.[d] The best soile we tooke to our selves, and gave them mountaines and bogges: alas poore sillie fellowes, these be they that now take Armes against us. Wherefore faint not, be of good courage, and we shall prevaile; let us winne vantage of ground, and get the side of the hill, and bogge against them, that their horses prevaile not, and once master them, we shall quickly over-runne the pesants; now last, kisse one another, in token that you will live and die one with another.

His words being ended, they marched forward with Pipes, Cornets, and Trumpets sounding. Their chiefe armes were Skeynes, Speares, Darts, Slings, and Sparthes, (which we call Galloglas Axes:) they sent their boyes and varlets, as they had formerly determined, to the top of the hill. The King of Leinster that had the leading of the horsemen, no sooner espied them, but (contrary to the plot laid downe upon the hill of Trase) put spurres to his horse, and with a loud voyce said, follow me, they were straight upon their backes that fled, so that the Danes had no leisure to receive them for their safegard, but were driven to kill their owne before, as the Irish did

[d] *Fabian part* 6. *cap.* 198. writeth that the Danes did the like in England.

behinde. Immediately came the light foot under the leading of *Gillemore*, and together with the horse, charged the voward of the Danes, so that the rascals of the Danes, and the light footmen of the Irish were slaine, with the death and hurt of many a Dane. Then came the great battaile of the Kings of Ireland in rescue of the horse, with a great and terrible noise, and gave a stout charge upon the enemie (that kept the ground, I meane the side of the hill) and fiercely bare them downe to the bottome, where they fought a cruell battell with equall fortune, almost the whole day, untill the King of Denmarkes sonne was slaine by the King of Leinster, whereupon the Danes fled, the Irish followed, and had the killing of them without resistance, till horse and man were weary, and the Danes in a manner all destroyed. Of the Irish were slaine (as I finde in the antiquities of the land) foure Kings, twenty five Kings sonnes, and of others, nineteene thousand, seven hundred and threescore, though others extenuate the matter. They say the horses went to their bellies in bloud, also the ayre with the stinke was infected, and thereof shortly after rose a grievous plague, which cut off the wives, children, and servants of the Danes, and of many of the Irish that were slaine.

There was at this field, one *Ferreis* a Dane, a valiant souldier in the fight, but escaping with life, for very sorrow of the overthrow, and losse of his friends, fell madde, and kept company with wilde beasts to his

dying day. *Fin Mac Coile*, one of the principall Captaines of the Danish sept, was in Rome at the time of this field; many things are reported of him worthy remembrance. His chiefe house was called Baraghllys in Vlster; he was a man in his prosperitie of great command in Ireland, so that the Danes and Norweyans had through him great dealing and entercourse with Ireland, and Ireland with them. But yet (as it sometime falleth out among the deerest friends) many jarres and broiles and factions fell betweene them, and especially betweene the sept of *Klan ne Morne*, and *Klan ne Boisken*, both which sides still relieved themselves out of Denmarke. The King of Denmarke at last hearing of the fame of *Fin Mac Coile*, sent for him, and tooke such a liking to him, that he concluded to marry him unto his daughter. *Fin* went thither with three thousand souldiers: the King one day as they conversed together, asked after the manner of the death of his three sonnes, *Comen*, *Law-ne-Meyd*, and *Feagh*, who formerly went into Ireland to maintaine one of the factions; *Dermot O Doyne*, (one of *Fins* company) answered, trouble not thy selfe, O King, this is the hand that killed thy sonne *Comen;* one *Osker* said, this is the hand that killed thy sonne *Law-ne-Meyd; Keyn Mac Fin* also said, this is the hand that killed thy sonne *Feagh.* Herewith the King was wroth and said, *Fin Mac Coile*, thou and thy men are my prisoners; forthwith they drew their Skeynes, the Kings guard for feare fled, they tooke him prisoner, carried him aboord their

shippes, hoised up saile, and brought him to Ireland, so as the marriage was dasht, and the King driven to pay a ransome for his libertie, before he could get from them. This *Fin Mac Coile* also fought with a Gyant that landed at Houth, and came to challenge oombats for tribute, and by policie, not by strength, overcame him: his policie was this; he caused him in the night, (for the space of three nights) to be kept waking, and in the day time to be fought withall, and thereby weakened his strength, and foiled the Gyant. Toward his end, one *Gorre* an old man, after these former warres and troubles, came to his house (before spoken of) and boasted unto the Gentlewomen then present, of his feates in warre, and the combats he had fought, whereat they laughed; he being offended with them, sware in his anger that hee would burne them all, got old timber and straw, put it in the house, fired it, made fast the doores, and compassed about the house with men that none might escape. They cryed unto him out of their windowes to save their lives, but he was inexorable, and could not bee drawne to any compassion, and when the house was readie to fall, he fled into Mounster, and there hid himselfe in a Cave. *Fin Mac Coile* came home from hunting, and beheld this wofull desolation, how his Wife, his Maides, his old Souldiers, his Horses, his Greyhounds, his Plate and houshold stuffe, his Shields, Iackes, and Shirts of maile, and his instruments of Musicke, were consumed to ashes, made after *Gorre* into Mounster, where he found him, and after some skirmish of both sides,

tooke him, and brought him to the place where he had committed this villany. *Gorre* when hee beheld the bones of them that were burned, laughed, and being asked why, his answer was, that hee laughed at them that formerly laughed at him. This wilie *Gorre* being kept that night from execution, in the dead of the night stole away, and was found in a Cave, where by commandment of *Fin Mac Coill*, *Hugh Gorre* his owne sonne killed his father, and after became madde himselfe. And the end of *Fin Mac Coill* was, that he dyed a beggar and in great miserie. So farre out of the booke of *Houth.* Now to continue the storie.

It is written of *Maximus*, who beganne his raigne in Britaine, *Anno Dom.* 387, that he tooke great displeasure against the Scots and Irish, for partaking with *Conan*, and upholding the faction betweene him and *Carodoch:* thus it is written; *Maximus* [e] drave the Scots out of Britaine, and compelled them to get habitation in Ireland, the out Iles, and the North part of the maine, and finally divided their region betweene the Britaines and the Pictes. He denounced warre also against the Irish men, for receiving them into their land; but they craving peace, yeelded to subscribe, that from thenceforth they would not receive any Scot into their dominions.

[e] *W. Harrison* in the description of Brit. *Georg. Buchan. reg. Scot. lib.* 4.

Hector Boetius [f] penneth this matter at large, that all the Scots were banished, and despersed themselves into the Hebrydes, Orchades, Norwey, Denmarke, and some into France and Italie. And where *Maximus* somewhat tendred their utter ruine and overthrow; and referred them to the Pictes for favour, the Pictes most cruelly gave sentence, that the Scots which fled not, should eate the Pictes sword, &c. And of Ireland he writeth, *Vpon the first comming of this newes, all Ireland mourned and made great lamentation; and when they had deliberately examined the exiles, and understood all the accidents that befell them in Albion, they appointed certaine dayes for a parley, summoned from East to West, all the Princes of the land to meete their Monarch at the certaine day and place prefixed, to consult how and by what meanes the Roman forces might be resisted, and the kingdome of Albion restored to their allies and cousins the Scots. When they could devise no remedie (for they feared the power of the Romanes) they thought good to put up all iniuries, and to intreate for peace. To this purpose they sent Ambassadors to Maximus the Romane Captaine, who at the first sharpely rebuked them, for that they had sent aide into Albion against the Romanes their confederates and favourites, and in especiall, seeing that unto that day, Ireland of all the kingdomes of the world, felt*

[f] *H. Boet. Scot. hist. lib. 6.*

little smart of the Romane sword. In the end he received them into favour, and granted them peace upon these conditions. That they should thenceforth receive no enemies of the Romanes into the Realme of Ireland, neither any that gave aide against the Romanes, and that no rebell of the Irish under pretence of marchandize, should thenceforth set foot in Albion. These conditions of peace being concluded, the Irish were quiet, and trode not upon Scottish soile. So farre *Boetius.*

Not long after this (according to *Ponticus Virunius* g) *Guanius*, King of Hunnes, and *Melga* King of Pictes having long hulled here and there, and roved upon the seas, were by *Gratianus* (after their invading of Britaine and Scotland, in the absence of *Maximus*) overthrowne, and driven out of the kingdome, and forced to flee for refuge into Ireland: foule weather followed these two Kings, and Ireland gave them hard entertainment at the first. Notwithstanding I finde, that this *Guanius* and *Melga*, after the death of this *Gratianus*, (who usurped the kingdome of Britaine for the space of foure yeeres upon the death of *Maximus*, who had slaine *Gratianus* the Emperour) prepared againe for Britaine, and brought with them the exiled Scots with Irish and Ilanders for their aide. But to proceed.

Thomas Cooper, who afterwards was Bishop of

g *Ponticus Virunius lib. 4.*

Winchester, speaking of the returne of the Scots from exile (in his continuing of the Chronicle of *Lanquet*) maketh the same to be *Anno Dom.* 423 and withall delivereth his conceit, that the Scots about this time came first out of Ireland into that country, which of them was called Scotland. If he had referred it to a further yeere, namely when the sixe sonnes of *Muredus* King of Vlster came to Scotland, haply it would have carried some probabilitie: but to say that it was the first comming of the Scots into Scotland, I doe no more like of it, then *George Buchanan* [h] doth, neither doth it concurre with the antiquities precedent or subsequent. *Cambrensis* and *Stanihurst* doe direct me in this course. *Here I am to note, (saith* Cambrensis) *that in the time of* Neall, *Monarch of Ireland, the sixe sonnes of* Muredus, *King of Vlster, with no small navie, poseessed the North parts of Britaine, whence the nation issuing out of them, and by speciall name called Scottish to this day, inhabite that northerne angle; but upon what occasion they came hither, how and by what great treasons (rather then voyages) they banished the Pictes from those parts, a stout nation, farre passing them for armes and courage, I referre to our Topographie of Britaine.* Stanihurst [i] *addeth; this inrode into Albania was a little before the comming of Patricke.* So that these Noble men of Ireland came into Scotland in the time of *Neale,* and

[h] *Rerum Scot. lib.* 5.

[i] *Stan. in appendice.*

Patricke came into Ireland in the time of *Leigerius* the sonne of *Neale*, as hereafter more at large shall appeare.

In the meane time we reade, how that (*Anno* 430. according to *Functius*) *Celestinus* Bishop of Rome sent *Palladius* into Scotland, who was the first that gave them Bishops, for unto that time, the Churches without Bishops, were governed by Monkes,[k] with lesse pride and outward pompe, but with greater sanctitie and meekenesse of spirit, &c. I make mention of him, for that (as our Irish *Anonymus*, and *Iocilin*[l] doe write) he landed in the North parts of Ireland, where he hardly escaped with life, as it is reported, thence he went to the Ilands, where he did much good, lastly he came to Scotland, preached the Gospell, rooted out the Pelagian heresie, and consecrated them Bishops, &c.

At this time (as it is written in the life of *Declanus*) Christian religion first beganne, and tooke roote in Ireland, not as some have dreamed, by Saint *Iames* the Apostle, neither by Saint *Patricke*, whom they terme the Apostle of Ireland. The truth of the historie is as followeth. There was one *Colmannus* in Mounster, a reverend Priest, (and the first Christian which I finde upon record in Ireland) that baptized one *De-*

[k] *Geo. Buchanan rey Scot. lib.* 5.

[l] *Iocelin in vita Sancti Patricij cap.* 24.

clanus, and delivered him to be brought up unto one *Dymna* a Christian schoolemaster, under whom he profited so much, that his fame was spread farre and nigh, so that upon good advice and counsaile, he travailed to Rome, where *Celestinus* the Pope consecrated him Bishop, where also he met with *Albœus* a Bishop of Irish birth. In his returne from Rome, he mette with *Patricke* in Italie, conversed a while with him, and being inioyned by *Celestinus*, hastened to Ireland, and left Patricke that was bound for Rome. *Declanus* after his arrivall in Ireland, came among his owne sept (whom mine Author calleth *Nandesi*, and I take to be the ancient house of the *Decies*) not farre from Lismore, and there preached the Gospell, and converted many to the Christian faith. Thither came unto him, (saith the Legend) seven holy men *Mocellog*, *Beanus*, *Colmanus*, *Lachuyn*, *Moby*, *Fyndlug*, and *Caminanus*: they builded them celles, conversed together, and planted the Christian faith over all Mounster. He went to *Engus* the sonne *Nafrygh*, King of Mounster, whose Pallace was in Cassill, who gave him leave to preach, yet received not the faith; the reason of this favour (as I finde it) was for that *Engus* had married his mother, and had issue by her, *Colman* and *Eochard*. *Colman* was by Saint *Albœus* the Bishop baptized, and then received the Ecclesiasticall habite, *Eochard* raigned after his father King of Mounster.

Saint *Declanus* took a second iourney to Rome, and

was reverently entertained by *David* Bishop of Menevia; after the effecting of his businesse, he returned into Ireland, and arrived in a place called Ard-naciored, in Latine *Altitudo ovium*, now called Ardmore, the which soile the Lord of Nandesi gave him, where goodly buildings have beene, and as the record runneth, *Civitas sancti Declani quæ in eo loco posita est, vocatur Ardmore, id est, Altitudo magna.* Farther in the same Legend I finde, *Quatuor sanctissimi Episcopi, cum suis discipulis fuerunt in Hibernia, ante Patricium prædicantes in ea Christu, scilicet, Albæus, Declanus, Ybarus & Kyaranus (alias Keran) & hi plures ad Christum rete evangelico traxerunt, sed tamen sanctus Patricius Majores Hiberniæ, & potentiores ad fidem convertit.* In their time *Patricke* sent from *Celestine* Bishop of Rome came to Ireland whom these foure Bishops with their followers saluted, and seeing *Patricke* (after the humour of humorous people) more graced then themselves, jarred with him, they would not (forsooth) have any of forraigne nation to patronize the land. In the originall it is recorded: *Ybarus nulla ratione consentire Sancto Patricio, nunquam ei subditus esse voluit, nolebat enim Patronum Hiberniæ de alia gente habere, & conflictus magnos inter se ipsos Ybarus & Patricius fecerunt.* But afterward by much adoe, they were reconciled. See gentle reader the infirmitie of men, and emulation following the same. At *Cassill* they were reconciled by *Engus* King of Mounster, whom *Patricke* baptized, who after his baptisme, founded there

the Catherdall Church, in the honour of Saint *Patricke*, made it the Metropolitane See of Mounster, and assigned *Albæus* the first Bishop there. This King held there a Parliament of spirituall and temporall persons of his kingdome, ratifying the premisses, pacifying all quarrels, and yeelding contentment to all sides, The Legend reporteth, *in quo decretum est ut Albæus secundus Patricius, & Patronus Mumeniæ esset; & Declanus secundus Patricius, & Patronus esset Nandeisi, & Nandeisi sua Diocesis usque ad finem seculi esset. Postea sancti Episcopi salutantes & benedicentes regem Engusum, ad sua in osculo pacis, cum spirituali gaudio, ad opus Domini seminandum regresi sunt: Wherein it was decreed, that* Albæus *should be a second* Patricke *and Patron of Mounster, and that* Declanus *should be a second* Patricke *and Patrone of Nandeisi, and that Nandeisi should be his Diocesse to the end of the world. After all, these holy Bishops saluted and blessed King* Engus, *and in the kisse of peace, with spirituall ioy, returned every one to his charge, to sow the worke of the Lord.* Immediately there insued a grievous plague over all Mounster, and especially at Cassill, which was the death of thousands; the manner of it was this, first they had the yellow jaundies, then they fell downe for dead. King *Engus* lamented greatly the death of seven Nobles of Mounster, that were pledges with him at Cassill, and miscarried in this mortalitie. Not long after, *Declanus* ended the way of all flesh, and lyeth buried at Ardmore.

Albæus, (as his owne Legend delivereth) the second Patrone of Mounster after *Patricke* the generall Patrone of Ireland was borne in Elyach, now called Ely O Caroll. His fathers name was *Olenais*, his mothers, *Sandith*, a maid servant in the house of King *Cronanus*, the Lord of Eliach was then called a King. *Cronanus* in his rage, bid his servants hang the whoore, and kill the childe; the servants loath to dispatch an innocent, tooke him out of his Pallace, and laid him under the side of a rocke. One *Lochanus* the sonne of *Lugyr* passing by, pittied the childe, tooke him to his horse, and set him to nurse among certaine Britaines, in the East part of Elyach. *Palladius* (saith the story) passing from Rome toward Scotland, and travelling through Ireland, baptized him. The Britaines sent him into France, where hee was trayned up in Christian schooles, and brought up under Bishop *Hilarius*, who sent him to Rome, where he was consecrated Bishop, and remained one whole yeere and fiftie dayes, preaching and expounding holy Scripture, with great admiration. And saith the Legend, there came unto him out of Ireland, fiftie grave and reverend men, of which number there were 12 Colmans, 12 Coenigeni, and 12 Fintans; the Bishop of Rome sent them backe into Ireland, they came to Dolomoir, where *Sampson* Bishop of that See gave them entertainement. There he baptized (saith the storie) King *Fintan*. After he had baptized and converted many unto the faith, and builded many Churches, and founded many Hospitals for lazers, he came to Ymleach, now called

Emley, a Bishopricke, and in the Legend, termed his owne Citie, fell sicke, and there left his bones. He conversed with *Biga*, (whom learned *Camden* calleth *Bega*) & *Bretach* Nunnes, and with *Nessanus* a great Antiquarie, saith mine Author, whose antiquities I never saw.

Kyaranus or *Keran*, *alias Piran*, (another of the foure Bishops that lived in Ireland before Saint *Patricke*) commeth next to be spoken of. Of him, *Capgrave* and the Martyrologe thus write, that hee was a Bishop and Confessour, and termed *Sanctorum Hiberniæ primogenitus*. And yet I finde in *Molanus*, that one Saint *Mansuetus*, (Bishop of Tullum now called *Tullense oppidu*, a towne in Flanders) was of Irish birth, fellow Disciple with Saint *Clement*, under Saint *Peter* the blessed Apostle, not trayned up in Ireland in the Christian faith, but in forraigne countries, where he was both baptized, instructed, and made Bishop, and where he now resteth. But to returne to *Keran*, he was borne in Ossorie, having to his father *Domnell*, (saith another, *Lugnæus*, whereby I gather, there were two of that name) to his mother *Wingella*, famous for life, learning, and sanctitie, in the dayes of Saint *Patricke*. He lived in the Ile of Cleere some 30 yeeres, from thence he went to Rome, where hee met Saint *Patricke*, who came to Ireland 30. yeeres after *Pyranus* was of note; in Rome hee continued 15. yeeres, expounding holy Scripture with great admiration, (as another saith 20. yeeres) there

the Bishop of Rome consecrated him Bishop. He came to Ireland, and was the first Bishop of Ossorie, having his See at Keran in Elie O Carroll. Hee refreshed, (saith mine Author) Saint *Patricke*, and tenne Irish Kings for the space of three dayes, he confirmed *Rhodanus* in the faith, visited the Virgin *Cota* (with her Priest *Geranus*) whose cell was a rocke of the seas, not farre from the Citie of Cluan in Mounster. He was a man of an austere life, never ware woollen garment, but the fell of Wolves and wilde beasts. As he came to his lodging, in time of Lent, and having inquired what provision they had, answere being made, that they had but a pestle of Porke, he commanded it to be laid on the table, one scornefully refused the dyet, he misliking with him, threatned him an ill end, which accordingly came to passe. When by the course of nature he saw his end approach, he called his friends unto him, and said: My welbeloved children and friends, God hath disposed that I should trauaile out of Ireland into Cornewall, and there expect the end of my dayes; I cannot withstand the will of God; I doe admonish you brethren, to uphold the place, with good workes and examples of life, for there shall come children of perdition and death among you, ye shall have mortalitie and warres, the Churches shall become waste and desolate, and the truth shall be turned into iniquitie, faith shall not shine with good workes, the Pastors will looke to themselves more then to their flocke, feeding themselves more then their sheepe: last of all,

I beseech you brethren, pray for me that my iourney may be prosperous, and that after my decease, I finde not my King and my God angry, but gentle and appeased, when I shall appeare before him. He tooke leave, came to Cornewall, and resteth some fifteene miles from Petrok-stow, 25. miles from Mousehole, where he is remembred for their Patron. *Cambrensis* writeth, that in Caerdise in Wales, there is a Chappell called Saint Perans Chappell, where King *Henry* the second in his returne from Ireland, repaired to heare divine service, as he hath remembred it in his Booke intituled *Itinerarium Cambriæ*. And thus much of Saint *Keran* or Saint *Peran*.

Of *Ybarus* the fourth Bishop before Saint *Patricke*, I finde some discourse in the Legend of *Abbanus* the Abbot, how hee baptized him, and brought him up in learning, and how they went together to Rome, and after their returne, conversed in Ireland with Saint *Patricke*, as formerly in part hath beene delivered in the life of *Declanus*.

This *Abbanus* is renowned in Ireland for building of Celles and religious houses; besides three Monasteries in Connaght, he built in Mounster, Ceall Achard Conchun, *alias*, Kill Achard, where Saint *Finan* (whom he baptized) after his death was Abbot. In the borders of Muskerry he builded the Nunnery of Husneach, and left it to Saint *Gobnaid* and her Virgins, another Monasterie also by Kilcullen. In

Nandesi (as I take it now called the Decies,) by the towne of Briogoban, he founded Kill-na-Marban, and at the foot of the mountaine Crotte in Muskerie, the famous Monasterie called Cluain-Airdmobecoc, where Saint *Becanus* was Abbot, the which afterward, because of *Becanus* his lamentation in devout sort (as it is written) for his sinnes, was called Ceall Nander, *Cella lachrymarum*, the cell of teares. He founded also Cluain Findglaise, & Cluain Conbrum, and went into Ely, where he baptized and converted unto the faith, thousands, as the Legend reporteth, in a place afterward called Rath. Becain, in Latine, *Atrium Becani*, where *Abbanus* is recounted Patron. He builded a Monasterie upon the river Berba, called Ross-Mac Treoin, where the Abbot Saint *Emenus* resteth; also in Meath, Ceall-Ailbe, and committed the charge thereof to the holy Nunne *Segnith* and her associates, and in the North part of that country, a Nunnery, Ceall Abbain, where he made an end of his course, and slept with his fathers. There was great strife for his corps, betweene the North and the South, the Lords of the country strove for it in Armes. The North pleaded, here hee first builded and made his abode, the South answered, with us was he borne, with us hee most conversed, and we will have his corps, or else we will leave our carkasses in this place. The body was laid in a Cart, bruit beasts had the drawing of it, when both sides were in Armes, the silly beasts were frighted, and ranne away with the dead, and where he was buried, I have not found as

yet. His Monkes howled, and kept a lamentable stirre; the record runneth thus. *Populus civitatis Magarnoid in Australibus Laginensibus. sic dicebat, Iste sanctus a Domino ad nos missus est, & per multos annos apud nos vixit, & monastaria multa et cellas in nostra regione edificavit, et ipse est noster Sanctus et venerabilis Pater, qui nostra civitatem similiter construxit, qui post multa miracula, apud nos, ad Dominum migravit, et per eum samper a Domino adjuvari speramus, et scitote, quod nos morti omnes prius trademus, antequam revertamini, eo a nobis absente. Ad hanc vocem ira principum et militum utrorumque arsit, surgentes in furorem magnum, contendere et rixari conantes. Tunc verò monachi & clerici, quibus non licebat bellare, seorsum exierunt, ululantes & flentes, & fusis lachrymis dicentes; heu heu Domine Deus, cur concedis tam maximam cædem, tantoru nobilium virorum, circa corpus famuli tui, qui in sua vita multa bella prohibuit?* He had familiaritie with Saint *Beartanus* an Abbot, *Brendanus*, *Molyng*, *Flannanus*, *Munnu*, *Gobban*, and with *Columba* the reverend Priest.

Saint *Patricke* was sent into Ireland by *Celestinus* Bishop of Rome before named, five yeeres after *Palladius* was sent into Scotland. So writeth *Iohannes Major Scotus*, and *Functius* therein followeth him; but I thinke they are too forward in their computation, for hee came into Ireland, *Anno* 432. and for this beside *Iohn Bale* Bishop of Ossorie, I have war-

rant from *Iocelin* [m] the Monke of Furnese, who wrote his life at the request of *Thomas*, Primate of Ardmagh, *Malachias* Bishop of Dune, and Sir *Iohn de Courcy* Earle of Vlster; and out of *Sigebertus* [n] and *Iohn Clyn* Guardian of the Fryers Minors in Kilkenny in his collections of Irish antiquities, [o] who also saith, that he was 16. yeeres old when the Pirates brought him out of Britaine into Ireland, that he was sixe yeeres in servitude, that he was eighteene yeeres under Saint *Germane* a Bishop in France, that he spent thirty and five yeeres in converting Ireland and other Ilands to the faith, that he bestowed thirty three yeeres in contemplation, and that hee died *anno ætatis*, one hundred twenty two.

Bale [p] writeth his life. *Patricius* surnamed *Succetus Magonius*, of most writers called *Magnus* for his excellent vertues, had in Britaine to his father one *Calphurnius* a Priest (the sonne of *Ponticus* a Priest, saith *Iocelin*) and to his mother one *Conche* of Pannonia (*Concessa* saith *Probus*) sister to Saint *Martin* (cosin saith *Iocelin*:) hee was brought up under godly tutors, when *Maximus* reigned, first under his uncle *Martin*, afterward under *Germanus* Bishop of Auxerre

[m] *Iocel. in præf. ad vitam Patric.*

[n] *Sigeb. ad. an.* 432.

[o] *Iohannes Clyn Antiq. Hiber.*

[p] *Iohn Bale Scrip. Britt. cent.* 1. & 14.

in Burgoyne, from thence he came to Italy, and so to Rome, where for his grave carriage and singular learning, descending of noble race, he got the name of a Senator, *Patricius.* His first name, saith *Florilegus* was *Nannus,* and in his consecration hee was called *Patricius; Sigebertus* and *Stanihurst* write, that in his baptisme hee was called *Suchat* or *Suchar;* of Saint *German, Magonius;* and of *Celestinus, Patricius;* the like saith *Beda* in his Martyrologe.

Celestinus then Bishop of Rome sent him together with *Segetius* a Priest, *anno* 432 after *Palladius* the Grecian, unto the Scots and Irish, to defend them from the Pelagian heresie; he with a wonderfull fervency of spirit preached the Gospell unto the Irish nation, travailing in the vineyard of the Lord the space of thirty nine yeeres, converted them unto the Lord with his great learning, and sanctity of life. Whereupon among other miracles (the which he is said to have wrought) upon the top of an hill, like a second *Elias,* he prayed and fasted forty dayes and nights, in a vision hee received of Christ the Gospell, and a staffe, (an Hermit gave him the staffe saith *Iocelin.)* Hee destroyed the prophane temples of false gods, hee erected monuments of piety, builded Churches, ordained Ministers, releeued the poore, redeemed captives, healed the sick, delivered the possessed, raised sixty dead persons, baptized twelve thousand, if all be true which *Vincentius, Antonius,* and *Capgrave* report of him. Out of the treasure of his

pure heart, many Anthors affirme, that he wrot in Latine these bookes.

De antiquitate Avalonica ..... *lib.* 1
Itenerarium Confessionis ..... *lib.* 1
O doeporicon Hiberniæ ..... *lib.* 1
Historia Hiberniæ ex Ruano .. *lib.* 1
De tribus habitaculis ..... *lib.* 1
De futura electoru vita ..... *lib.* 1
Abiectoria quædam 366 ..... *lib.* 1
Sermones quoque ..... *lib.* 1
¶ *Ad Cereticum tyrannum*..... *epist.* 1
Ad Avaloniæ incolas..... *epist* 1
Ad Hibernenses Ecclesias..... *epist. plur.*
Ad suos Britannos..... *epist. plur.*

The manuscript Legend of Ireland reporteth, that Saint *Patrick* in his Epistles wrote his owne life. The Antiquaries report, that in his conflicts with the sages of the Gentiles, this Apostle of the Irish wrought no lesse miracles then of old *Moses* under *Pharaoh*, or *Peter* under *Nero*, and that he endured many displeasures. In the end after his death, hee was buried neere the City of Dune, but the yeere among the Historiographers is not agreed upon; yet in remembrance of him this distichon was made.

Hi tres in Duno tumulo tumulantur in uno,
Brigida, Patricius, atque Columba pius.

¶ *Probus lib.* 2. of his life mentioneth it.

Saint *Patrick* died first, *Brigida* six yeeres after him, and *Columba* many yeeres after her, yet were all three buried in one grave. What *Bale* hath formerly written, I find he hath gathered out of *Vincentius*, *Antoninus*, *Capgrave*, *Leland*, *Gildas*, *Giraldus Cambrensis*, *Bostonus Buriensis*, and *Florilegus*; and all that *Iocelin* hath at large written, and what *Legenda Plumbea*, and the booke of *Houth* report, to avoid prolixity, and to shunne fabulous conceits, I omit. Now to the Irish Chroniclers.

They deliver, that in his captivity in Ireland being sold to *Milcho* King of Vlster (saith *Iocelin*) [r] to *Milach* (saith *Stanihurst*) to *Cuulen* (saith *Florilegus*) to *Macbuaine* saith the Irish *Anonymus*, and to reconcile them all, I take it that *Milcho* was called *Milcho Macbuaine*: he kept swine six yeeres; no disgrace unto him, for *Marcellus* Bishop of Rome (he that will not beleeue other writers, will credit the Martyrologe of Sarum) by the commandement of *Maximian* the tyrant, kept swine many yeeres. When *Patricks* six yeeres were expired, one of the swine turned up a clod, under the which lay so much mony as paid his ransome. When he came the second time, he landed at Carlingford, and inquired after *Milcho* whose captive hee had beene, who would not giue eare to his doctrine, but immediately after his death, his two daughters of one name, *Emeria* were baptized. *Laigerius* (in *Iocelin*, *Leogarius*) Monarch

[r] *Joc. in vita Patricij cap.* 12.

of Ireland, the son of *Neale* harkning unto Magicians and Sooth-sayers, gave commandement, (together with his brother *Corbre*) unto the Country, for the banishing of Saint *Patrick*, but *Dichu* and *Rius* (two brethren and great Commanders under him) received the faith, and *Conil* brother to *Laigerius*, who also himselfe shortly after grew indifferent, winking at them that did receive it, so that his Queene and his yonger brother received the faith, and his two daughters. And of *Laigerius* he thus prophecied: because thou hast alwaies withstood my doctrine, and ceased not above measure to persecute me, and hast above all disdained to beleeve in him that made all things, thou art the childe of death. And whereas of right, thou with the rest, yea before all thy confederates, oughtest presently to enter into everlasting torments; yet insomuch as thou meekely commest unto me, craving pardon, and like King *Achab*, humblest thy selfe before my God, the Lord will not forthwith bring upon thee the evill which thou hast deserved; notwithstanding there shall none of thy seed after thee sit upon thy seat, but shall serve thy yonger brother that beleeveth in my God, and his seed after him for ever.

As this holy man travailed in preaching the Gospell, he met with a young man whose name was *Mochaa* or *Mocho*, keeping swine, in whose physiognomie hee perceived towardnesse and sparkles of grace; he taught him, baptized him, trayned him up

in holy Scripture, made him Deacon, Priest, and Bishop of Dune where he lyeth buried. Clonsillan and Kellestowne, some five miles west of Dublin, have him for their Patron, where under an high rocke runneth a Spring called *S. Mochon* his Well. Next he baptized one *Benignus;* [s] called also *Stephanus*, so *Probus* writeth, with his father, mother, & familie, who proved so good a member in the Church of God, that he succeeded *S. Patricke* in Armagh; this *Benignus*, saith *Capgrave*, lyeth buried in Glastenburie. Saint *Patricke* also received into the faith, one *Erchas*, the sonne of *Dega*, saith *Iocelin*, whom he also made a Bishop. The Martyrologe of Sarum calleth him *Herkus*. At that time, one *Pheg* a Poet, and (saith *Probus*) *Duptachus* an Irish rymer or Poet in *Lastgerius* his Court, desired baptisme, and afterward all the dayes of his life, converted his vaine rymes into Chrihian Poems, and did much good thereby among the common people.

Saint *Patricke* [t] had brought with him into Ireland out of Italie, one *Mac Cartyn*, of Irish birth, so I reade in the martyrologe of Sarum, and three sisters of his owne, which proved very fruitfull. *Lupita* (who lived a Virgin, and lyeth buried at Armagh) *Trigridia* and *Darercha*. *Tigridia* had seventeene

[s] *Benignus* or *Stephanus*, successour to Saint *Patricke*. A Nunne (saith *Jocelin*) was in love with him, sent for him to her bed, but the signe of the Crosse made all well.

[t] *Ioc. cap.* 49. 51. 53. 68. 69. & *seq.*

sonnes, and five daughters; the men became Priests, Monkes, and Bishops; the daughters were made Nunnes: the Bishops were called *Brochadius*, *Brochanus*, *Mogenochus*, and *Lumianus*. *Darerca* the yongest sister had two Bishops to her sonnes, *Melrioch* and *Munis*: the martyrologe of Sarum reckoneth her children thus, *Mele*, *Melk*, *Muncse*, Bishops, *Riok*, *Finian* and *Bolke* Abbots. Where I thinke there is some errour, that *Melrioch* in *Iocelin* is *Mele*, and *Ryok* in the maytyrologe.

Of *Lumianus* I reade, that he baptized a Lord of the country, called *Fedlemus*, and his sonne *Forkernus*, whose mother was a Britain, his dwelling was at Ahtrum. There *Lumianus* by their meanes builded a Church some twenty five yeeres before the founding of Armagh, the which he tooke for his Bishops See, and ordered *Forkernus* to succeed him there. The possessions (saith mine Author) which were first given to this Church, afterward by the donations of other Princes, fell to belong to Armagh.

The holy man *Patricke* laboured still in the vineyard of the Lord; he baptized *Conallus*, *alias Conill*, Lord of Connaught, brother to *Laigerius*, and his familie, who gave *Patricke* a country called Dompniac-Patricke, and builded for himselfe a dwelling place called Raith-Artair. After seven yeeres, this *Conill* sent him to his brother *Logan* (*Cogan* saith the Booke of *Houth*) King of Leinster, whom hee bap-

tized, together with *Amolgath* (whom I take to be the ancestour of the house of *O Malaghlin)* a great Lord of a country, and his seven sonnes, *(Florilegus* saith they were seven Kings.) After this, this holy man comming out of Meth, and having passed over the water at Finglas, went up to a hill some mile from the village Athcled, now called Dublin. When he had viewed the place and soile adjoyning, he blessed the same, and is said to have prophecied thus; *This village is now but small, it will be great, it will be inlarged with wealth and worship, neither will it leave increasing untill it bee advanced to the seate of the Kingdome.*

In a while after, he came to the village, where the inhabitants hearing of the wonders which the Lord wrought by his hands, went out to meete him with much ioy, and beleeved by his preaching, and were baptized. My Author addeth that upon complaint made unto him, how that they were annoyed with brackish waters, which of necessitie they were driven to use, he walked about the village, turned up cloddes, digged the earth and found a Spring, which is now called Saint *Patrickes* Well.

From this village Athcled, hee went to Castleknok, where one *Murguus* dwelled and commanded those places, who hearing of *Patricks* comming, refused to give him entertainement, but sent him word that he was asleepe, in which sleepe (as the storie saith) he

died, of which accident the common saying ariseth, *Thou sleepest Murguus sleepe*, applyed to those that sleepe heavily, or are given to overmuch sleepe.

From Castleknok, he bent his course towards Mounster, and came to King *Engus, alias Oengus Mac Nafroic*, who received him ioyfully, and brought him to his Palace at Cassill, saith *Iocelin;* where also one *Daris* a great Lord in that country, shewed him much kindenesse. When he had baptized the King, and many thousands with him, he came to Vrmiunnan now called Ormond, where in like sort they received the faith, and the inhabitants in remembrance of him builded a Church, and dedicated the same to his name. From Mounster (where he preached seaven yeeres) hee tooke his iourney backe to Vlster, and came to King *Eochu*, whom he baptized, & his daughter *Cumia*, whom he made a Nunne, and committed her to the charge of the Nunne *Cecubris* (in the Nunnery of Drumdukain) whom *Patricke* first vailed of all the women in Ireland. Also he baptized *Olcanus*, who went into France to studie, and upon his returne, erected schooles in Ireland, and had many schollers, whereof a great number were afterwards Bishops, he himselfe towards his end, became a Bishop, and ended his dayes in sanctitie. When Saint *Patricke* had baptized a second *Conallus* (a petite King) and his brother *Fergus*, he prophecied of *Fedlemus* the sonne of *Fergus*, and of *Columba* the sonne of *Fedlemus*, what

a holy man hee should prove, as after hee did, and was the founder of an hundred Monasteries.

Saint *Patricke* for all this travaile sailed into Britaine for coadiutors and fellow-labourers in this worke, where he opposed himselfe both in publike and private against the Pelagians and other heretickes which disturbed the peace of the Church, and brought with him thirty learned men, whom afterward he consecrated Bishops. So that to this day in Britaine, (as in Anglesey, Bristoll, Exeter, and other places) there are Churches built in remembrance of him. He also converted the Isle of Man to the faith, and there is a Church which also beareth his name, and left them one *Germanus* to bee their Bishop, after whose death hee ordained for that place, *Conidrius*, *Ronillus* and *Machaldus*. Vpon his returne into Ireland, hee met with sixe of his Disciples, of Irish birth, that had beene Students beyond Seas, whom in the end he made Bishops; *Lugacius*, *Columbanus*, *Meldanus*, *Lugadius*, *Cassanus*, and *Cheranus*. Then he made (saith *Iocelin*) a second iourney unto Athcled now called Dublin; upon his comming, (which was about twentie yeeres after their conversion) and found them all given to idolatrie, and withall, one *Alpinus* a King with his Queene, and his retinue, lamenting the death of *Eochiad* their sonne and heire, and the drowning of their sole daughter *Dublinia*. *Patricke* preached, the people beleeved, the King hearing of him hoped to

reape some comfort; to bee short, (saith mine Author) the dead are raised to life, and Athcled ever after in remembrance of the Kings daughter *Dublinia*, was called Dublin.

Saint *Patrickes* manner was, first to Catechize, secondly to baptize, lastly to minister the Sacrament of the Lords Supper. When with the aide of the country, he builded Churches, hee would not name them after any Saints name, but Domnach the Church of the Lord. And when he had procured a Church to be builded in a place called Achad Fobuit, and consecrated his Disciple *Sennachus, alias Seachuallus* Bishop there, the humble sute of *Senachus* unto him was, that the Church should not be called after him, as the manner was, (saith mine Author [u]) in many places among the Irish people. The onely doctrine *Patricke* read and expounded unto the people, was the foure Evangelists, conferred with the old Testament. Hee is reported to have given many blessings, and to have denounced many curses. He had many Disciples, *Kertennus, Winnocus, Winwallocus*, likewise saith *Molanus, Elberus, Ibarus, Connedus, Secundinus, Assicus, Fiechus, Sennachus, Olcanus*, with many others which he made Bishops. I finde mention also of *Riochus* that kept his Bookes and Papers, and of *Rodanus* that kept his Cattell, that hee made them Bishops, and the world made them Saints.

[u] *Iocelin c.* 132.

Ireland is greatly beholding unto him, for it is recorded that hee went up to the top of the Mount Hely (I take it to be a hill in Ely, *O Carrols* country) where he made three petitions unto Almighty God for the people of Ireland that had received the faith. [x] *First, that every one might have grace to repent, though it were at the last houre. Secondly, that they might not be utterly destroyed by Infidels. Lastly, that no Irish man should live till the day of Iudgement; Quia delebitur per orationem sancti Patrizij septem annis ante judicium; for it shall be destroyed by meanes of Saint Patrickes prayers, seaven yeeres before the comming of Christ to iudgement. Probus* maketh mention of other Petitions, which for that I hold them fabulous, I will not rehearse. He procured (as it is written of him) seaven hundred Churches to bee builded in Ireland, ordained five thousand Ministers, consecrated three hundred and fifty Bishops, successively, understand, in his time. [y]

Darius [z] (the Booke of *Houth* calleth him *Dares*, in *Probus Dair*) a Noble man, affecting *Patricke*, and seeing him beare low saile, and shrowding himselfe with all humilitie in Vlster, drew him to dwell at Drumsailech, now called Armagh, and having used

[x] *Flor. histor. Anton Chron. part* 2. *tit.* 11. *cap.* 18.

[y] *Iocelin cap.* 187.

[z] *Ioc. cap.* 164. and 198.

meanes there for the building of a Church, *Patricke* went to Rome, procured all confirmations necessary to his purpose, arrived againe in Ireland, and being of the age of 122. yeeres, ended his life in the time that *Aurelius Ambrosius* raigned in Britaine, and *Forthkerrus* was Monarch of Ireland, *Brigida* and *Ethembria* who then were accounted two holy women, shrowded him to his grave, when *Thassach* a Bishop had ministred the Sacrament. *Probus* writeth that the Britaines came with great forces, attempting at severall times to fetch away his corps, and that the men of Vlster did withstand them. As for the purgatorie that is fathered upon him, I must referre the reader to the yeere of grace, 850. where he shall finde a second *Patricke* founder thereof.

In our *Patricks* time flourished many good Christians, renowned at this day, and as an Antiquarie and collector of antiquities, I desire the christian reader to accept of them as I finde them. And I will beginne with *Brigida* that gave Saint *Patricke* his winding sheete, shee was borne (as *Iohn Clyn* writeth) *anno* 439. in Fochart not farre from Dondalke, as *Bernard* deliuereth, she was the base daughter of one *Duptacus*, haply *Laigerius* his rymer before spoken of (a Noble man saith *Bale*) of the North parts, a Captaine of Leinster, saith the Book of *Houth*. *Capgrave* writeth, that her mother in wantonnesse having conceived, and her belly being espied to be up, *Duptacus* his wife caused her to be turned out of doores; *Dup-*

tacus to avoid the iealousie and disquietnesse of his wife, delivered her to a Poet or Bard, (a Magician saith *Bale*) who kept both Mother and Daughter, and trayned her up in such learning as he had skill in. Shee proved so singularly learned, and was in such account among all men, that a Synode of Bishops assembled by Dublin, used her advice in weightie causes, as I reade in the Booke of *Houth*. She became a Nunne, and wrought but one miracle, (saith *Bale*) that is, shee used meanes to purge a Bishop, one *Bronus* or *Bruno* from fornication, when the fact was manifestly proved against him. In the authenticke manuscript Legend of Ireland, I finde that she kept most in Leinster, and builded a Cell for her abode under a goodly faire Oke, which afterwards grew to be a Monasterie of Virgins, called Cyll-dara, in Latine, *Cella Quercus*, the Cell of the Oke, now Kildare, and saith mine Author, *ibique maxima civitas postea in honore beatissimæ Brigidæcrevit, quæ est hodie metropolis Laginensium.* The first Bishop by her meanes was *Conlianus, alias Conlaidus. Stanihurst* reckoneth the succession of the See in this sort.

Lony.	*Symon.*	*William.*
Ivor.	*Nicholas.*	*Galfride.*
Colnie.	*Walter.*	*Richard.*
Donatus.	*Richard.*	*Iames.*
David.	*Thomas.*	*Wale.*
Magnus.	*Robart.*	*Barret.*
Richard.	*Boniface.*	*Edmund Lane.*
Iohn.	*Madogg.*	

Who flourished in the yeere, 1518. So farre Master *Stanihurst:*

Hector Boetius[a] putteth us in remembrance of the honour given her by Scots, Pictes, Irish and English nations, and how that many Churches beare her name. The superstitious Irish in processe of time, found out a Bell called Clogg Brietta, *Brigids* Bell, whereunto, to deceive the simple people, they attribute great vertue and holinesse, the which together with other toyes they carried about, not onely in Ireland, but also in England, and were by Act of Parliament in England, banished the land in *Henry* the fifts time. *Cambrensis* reporteth that the harmonie of the foure Evangelists (the worke of Saint *Ierome*) was caused by *Brigid* (most of it) to be written in letters of gold, and was as curious a worke (saith he) as ever I saw, and called *Brigids Booke,* the which was kept as a monument (saith *Stanihurst*) at Kildare.

She deceased about the yeere 510. (another saith, *anno* 548.) and about the yeere 524. she was translated from the Hebrides into Dune, and resteth by Saint *Patrickes* side, as formerly hath beene declared in his life. Ireland hath given her this Epitaph.

Flos patriæ, pietatis amans, virtutis alumna,
Sidus Hibernorum, Brigida virgo fuit.

[a] *Scot. hist. lib.* 9.

In her Legend I finde mention of *Ercus*, a Bishop, the disciple of Saint *Patricke*, borne in Mounster, also of Saint *Ruanus* a Bishop, Saint *Numidus*, Saint *Præcipuus*, Saint *Daria* a Virgin, Saint *Darlugdach* called a Virgin, and yet had a daughter that was baptized in the presence of *Brigide*. This *Darlugdach* was the second Nunne, and succeeded *Brigide* in Kildare, whose remembrance is celebrated the same day with her. *Illand* King of Leinster gave *Brigide* great honour, of him I read in her Legend, that hee was a most worthy Prince, and fortunate in all his affaires. *Illand Rex Lageniæ qui triginta bella in Hibernia vicit, octo certamina in Britannia, occidit Engusium regem Momoniæ cum Ethna uxore, quos Patricius baptizavit: Illand King of Leinster, who wonne thirty battailes in Ireland, and eight combats in Britaine, slue Engusus King of Mounster, and Ethna his wife, whom Patricke had baptized.*

About this time lived *Cælius Sedulius*, whom *Damianus à Goes*, a Knight of Portingall challenged for a Spaniard. *Bale* writeth hee was a Scot, and *Stanihurst* that he was borne in Ireland. I will first lay downe what *Bale* hath, next what *Stanihurst* reporteth. *Cælius Sedulius* (*saith* Bale[b]) *by nation a Scot, by calling a Priest, a man trayned up in learning from his youth, cleaved as a diligent scholler unto* Hildebert, *the most learned Archbishop of Scots, as* Tritemius *delivereth. After the decease of his master, being*

[b] *Iohannes Bale Script. Brit. cent.* 14.

desirous of farther knowledge, he tooke a painefull voyage in hand, travailed throughout Spain, France, Italie, Greece and Asia; last of all, after he had read in Achaia most learned lectures, to the great profit of many, hee came backe to Rome, where with great labour he distributed most abundantly in like sort the treasure of singular learning. Hee was a man exercised in holy Scripture, of a singular wit, excellently well seene in all manner of secular literature, passing both for verse and prose, so that Gelasius, *Bishop of Rome, in the decrees, dist.* 15. *calleth him reverend* Sedulius, *and gave his workes no meane commendation.* Paterius *the disciple of* Gregorius Magnus, *and* Remigius Antisiodorensus, *in his commentary upon him of old have published his fame and renowne.* Sedulius *both in verse and prose hath published many workes, whereof in* Boston *of Burie, and* Tritemius, *I onely found these that follow. Vnto* Macedonius *the Priest, a singular worke, which he intituled*

Carmen paschale.....	lib. 4	*Paccales quicunq; dapes conviva requiris.*
Elegia vel exhortatorium ad fideles....	lib. 1	*Cantemus socij Dom. cantemus honorem.*
De signis & virtutibus..	lib. 1	*Domino meo charissimo:*
Gesta et miracula Christi	lib. 4	*Expulerat quondam, &c.*
Superutroque testamento	lib. 2	
In Psalmos Dividicos..	lib. 1	
Collectanea in Paulum	lib. 14	*Antequam Apostolica verba.*
In Paulum ad Romanos	lib. 1	*Sciendum est quod hoc.*
Ad Corinthios.....	lib. 2	*Quod nomen suum proponit.*
Ad Galatas.....	lib. 1	*Hoc est non ab humana.*
Ad Ephesios	lib. 1	*Refert scriptura testante.*
Ad Philippenses	lib. 1	*Metropoli Macedoniæ cum.*

Ad Colossenses	lib. 1	*Hac vice Apostolatus autor.*
Ad Thessalonicenses	lib. 2	*Quod non dicit Apostolus.*
Ad Timotheum	lib. 2	*Non secundum præsumptionem.*
Ad Titum Discipulum ..	lib. 1	*Hanc epistolam scribit de.*
Ad Philemonem.....	lib. 1	*In carcere vel in catenis.*
Ad Hebræos	lib. 1	*Quoniam apud Hæbræorum.*
De factis Christi prosaice	lib. 2	
Ad Cæsarem Theodosiu. .	lib. 1	*Romulidum ductor Clariss.*
Epist ad diversos	lib. 1	*Sedulius Scotigena dilect.*
In editionem Donati....	lib. 1	
In Prisciani volumen....	lib. 1	
Carmina diversi generis. .	lib. 1	

He published also certaine Hymnes which the Church useth.

1 *A solis ortus cardine*
Ad usque terræ limitem
Christem canamus principem, &c.

2 *Hostis Herodes impie*
Christum venisse quid times? &c.

He flourished in the yeere after the Incarnation, 450. *under* Theodosius *Iunior the Emperour, what time* Fergusius *the second raigned in Scotland after his miserable exile by the Romanes. Of this Author,* Sigebertus *and* Bostonus *write more.* So farre *Bale.*

Stanihurst [c] pleadeth for Ireland, and writeth: *Sedulius was not only of Irish birth, but also the light of all Ireland, neither will we suffer any longer so excellent a man out of his native soile contrary to all right to exile or wander, but he is rather to be restored to his former inheritance, as it were with a new solemnity of birth.* In another place [d] hee seemeth to

[c] *R. Stan. prefac. ad lib.* 1. *de reb. Hib.*

[d] *Append. ad cap.* 17.

qualifie the matter (having already chalenged *Damianus a Goes* of iniurie) and to reconcile the dissonance of varying writers, that the Scottish is taken for the Irish, and the Irish for the Scottish; and to satisfie the reader, noteth the confusion, how that all the commentaries of *Sedulius* upon the Epistles of *Paul* beginne, *Sedulij Scoti Hibernensis, &c. the Commentarie of* Sedulius *the Scot of Ireland.* And to shut up this challenge of all sides, I finde that there was a second *Sedulius*, a man of no lesse fame and learning, and hee is said to bee a Scottish man, therefore let Ireland being more antient then Scotland, take the first, and Scotland the last.

In the like sort (excepting the challenge) standeth *Fridelinus Viator*, [e] so called by reason of his great travaile; his stile is, *Scotorum Hibernicorum regis olim filius, the sonne sometime of the King of the Scots in Ireland*, whom I couch among them of Irish birth, because of the ancient stile and distinction often used by *Buchanan, Scoti Albanenses, and Scoti Hibernenses*, the first he challengeth for Scotland, the second he referreth to Ireland, and therefore I accept of him as granted. He was a Kings sonne of Ireland, excellently studied in Philosophie, earnestly addicted to the ecclesiasticall course of life, and to the end he might plant religion, and spreade abroad christianitie, enterprised a voyage farre from his native soile. This holy man first of all taught here and there through-

[e] The life of *Fridelinus Viator Io. Bale script. Britanic cent.* 14.

out France, he came to Poitiers, and became father of the Monkes of Saint *Hilarie*, and with the aide of King *Clodovarus*, erected a stately Monasterie, the like he did at Mosella in Flanders, upon the top of the mount Vosagius, at Argentine, Curia Rhetiorum, and elsewhere throughout Burgundie. Lastly, he came to Angia Seckingensis upon the Rhene, to the end he might there also build a Cell; after many godly Sermons and learned Interpretations, he is said to have written a Booke of exhortations unto the sacred Virgins. He flourished in the yeere 495. and resteth in the Monasterie of Seckinge before spoken of.

Ireland remembreth the feast of Saint *Fekin*, that hee was of the Kings bloud, and an Abbot, cured many of the flixe or fluxe, and dyed thereof himselfe.

Many things are written of Saint *Modwën*, (whom the Britaines call *Mawdwen*) the daughter of *Naughtheus* the Irish King, who heard Saint *Patricke* preach, and of her companions *Orbila*, *Luge*, *Edith*, *Athea*, *Lazara*, *Sith* (whom the Irish call *Osith*) *Osmanna*, and of *Brigid* spoken of before, whereof some began with *Patricke*, and ended with him, some began with him, and lived many yeeres after, (as *Capgrave* writeth in the life of *Modwen*) to the time of the Bishop *Collumkill*, (otherwise called *Colme* and *Columba*) and the Eremite, Abbot, or Bishop *Kevin*.

Saint *Modwen* was a Nunne, lived 130. yeeres. The Irish, Scots, and English (in which countries she had travailed) strove for her corps, at length *Columkill* the Bishop gave sentence for England, where shee resteth at Andreisey. *Bale* writeth how that one *Galfride*, Abbot of Burton upon Trent, in the time of King *Iohn*, wrote the life and memorable acts of this Irish Virgin *Modwen*, unto the posterity, with great applause.

Capgrave writeth the life of Saint *Sith*, (otherwise called *Osith*) that was brought up under *Modwen*, that she was a Kings daughter, and borne in England: *Leppeloo* the Carthusian, and other forraigne Writers say little of her, saving that the Danes (being Heathens) cut off her head, and that shee tooke her head in her armes, carried it uprightly three furlongs off, knockt at the Church doore, (being lockt) with her bloudy hands, and there fell downe. [f] The Martyrologe of Sarum confoundeth *Dorothy*, and Saint *Sith* thus; the 15. of Ianuarie the feast of Saint *Dorothie* otherwise called Saint *Sith*, is kept in Ireland, *who refused marriage, fled into a Monasterie, where the devill appeared unto her*, and there mine Author left her.

Of *O smanna* the Virgin I finde little, saving what *Capgrave* reporteth, that she was of the bloud royall in Ireland, and having infidels to her parents, fled

[f] The reader is not bound to beleeve this.

into France, dwelled upon the banke of Loire, the river of Lions, and there in peace ended her dayes.

I read that about this time one *Tathe*, the sonne of an Irish King, forsooke his fathers possessions, went to the Diocesse of Landaffe in Wales, and became a Monke, builded a Monasterie, and there left his bones.

Gualterus Calenius, Archdeacon of Oxford; *Caxton* and others doe write, that *Aurelius Ambrosius*, after his valiant exploits and noble victories, went to a Monasterie neere Cair-caredoch, now called Salisburie, where through the treason of *Hengist, (which the Britaines call Toilly Killill Hirion, the treason of the long knives)* the Nobles and Princes of Britaine were slaine and buried, called his Councell, and demanded what monument were meete to be made there in remembrance of so many Nobles of the land there resting in the dust of the earth. Carpenters, Masons, Carvers, Ingravers, and Tombe-makers, being out of all places sent for, came thither, delivered their opinions, but concluded nothing. Then stepped forth a Bishop, which said; O King, if it may stand with your pleasure, there is one *Merlin* of Worcester, a Prophet, a searcher of Antiquities, a man of rare gifts, I wish his opinion in the matter. *Merlin* came, and being "advised, said as followeth. Most Noble King, upon "occasion offered, I went lately into Ireland, and "having ended my businesse, I was inquisitive of

" antiquities, and sight of monuments, where among " other things, being brought to a mountaine of Kil- " dare, I saw so rare a sight, in so rude a country, as " might bee seene; there was a round row of huge " stones, the which none of this age had so framed, " neither could be, unlesse Art had mastered the com- " mon skill of man; send for them, and set them vp " as they are there couched, and they will bee a mo- " nument whilst the world standeth. Hereat the King smiled and said; how shall we convey so great stones into Britaine, from so farre a countrey, and to what end? as though Britaine yeelded not as good stones to all purposes? *Merlin* replied, be not dis- pleased O King, there is a hid mystery in those stones, they are medicinable, and as I was given to under- stand in Ireland, the Gyants of old dwelling in that land, procured them from the farthest part of Affricke, and pitched them there, in them they bathed them- selves, and were rid of their infirmities. The Britaines hearing this, were perswaded to send for them, the King appointed his brother *Vter-Pendragon*, with *Merlin*, and fifteene thousand men to effect the busi- nesse. In a short time, they arrived in Ireland. *Gil- lomer* King of Leinster, raised an Armie to resist them, and reviled the Britaines, saying, what fooles and asses are you? are the Irish better then the Bri- tish stones? and turning himselfe to his Armie, said, come on, quit your selves like men, keepe your monu- ments, and defend your country. *Vter-Pendragon* seeing this, animated his company, they met, and

manfully encountred in the end; *Gillomer* fled, and the Irish were discomfited. *Vter-Pendragon* marched on, they came by *Merlins* direction to the place, and beholding the hugenesse of the stones, they wondred, yet they joyed that they had found them. To worke they went, some with Ropes, some with Wythes, some with Ladders, and carried them away, brought them to Britaine, and pitched them in the Plaine of Salisburie, which place is now called Stonehenge.

Beside this, there are divers monuments of Gyants in Ireland, as at Dundalke, Louth, Ardee, and on the hilles not farre from the Naas: the like *Saxo Grammaticus* [g] reporteth of the Danes, a nation famous for Gyants, and mighty men, and this, saith he, the great and huge stones laid of old upon Caves and Tombes of the dead, doe declare.

About this time, *Passent* the sonne of *Vortiger* that fled into Germany for aide, arrived in the North parts, *Aurelius Ambrosius* met him, and put him to flight; *Passent* came into Ireland, delivered his griefe unto *Gillomer* King of Leinster, craved him to extend his Princely favour toward him; *Gillomer* on the other side complained of the wrong done him by *Vter-Pendragon* and the Britaines, namely, how they had slaine his subjects, wasted his country, and carried away his rare monuments, concluding that hee was willing of himselfe to be revenged of them, much

[g] *In præfatione ad hist. Dan.*

more finding this opportunitie. *Caxton* saith, he came with fifteene thousand Irish to aide *Passent* against the Britaines; the Armie was great, for with *Passent* came Germans, Irish and Saxons, and arrived at Menevia (now called Saint Davids) at which time *Aurelius Ambrosius* being sicke of poyson, (by the procurement of *Passent)* of which he died, *Vter-Pendragon* was appointed Generall of the field, met with the invaders, fought a bloudy battaile (where many fell on both sides) and in the end, slue *Passent* and *Gillomer*, and ouerthrew the Germans, Irish, and Saxons, and was crowned King of England.

I doe finde in Antiquaries, together with *Florilegus, Fabian, Caxton, Holinshed,* and *Fleminge,* (men of great iudgement) that the Pictes and Scots in the dayes of King *Arthur* (who succeeded his father *Vter-Pendragon)* ioyned with the Saxons, and drew to their aide, *Gillomer,* second of that name, King of Ireland, so that *Arthur* sent for *Howell* his sisters sonne, King of little Britaine in France, who came with fifteene thousand fighting men, and ioyning forces with *Arthur*, foyled the Pictes, Scots, and Saxons, vanquished the Irish King, and chaced him into Ireland, and the yeere following, *viz.* five hundred twenty and five, in revenge of the former aide, hee came into Ireland, offered King *Gillomer* battaile, hee then being Monarch of Ireland (as *Caxton* and the book of *Houth* record) assembled the Princes and Nobles of the land; and it is said that King *Anguish* came to the field

with five thousand horse, but *Arthur* constrained them to yeeld, and to acknowledge by doing their fealtie, to hold the Realme of Ireland of him. Whereof *Harding* saith,

The somner next Arthur went to Ireland,
With battaile sore forefoughten y conquered,
And of the King, had homage of that land:
To hold of him, so was he of him feared;
And also gate (as Chronicles have us lered)
Denmarke, Friseland, Gotland and Norwey,
Iseland, Groenland, the Isle of Man and Orkney.

The booke of *Houth* recordeth, that *anno Dom.* 519. *Arthur* summoned to a speciall feast of solemnitie of the round Table, *Gillomer* the Monarch of Ireland, and King *Anguish,* with the Princes and Nobles of the land, where they continued during the whole time of the solemnitie. In which triumph it is recorded that *Garret,* King of Orkeney, sonne to King *Lotho,* and nephew to *Arthur,* being one of King *Arthurs* Knights, together with his two brethren, performed most valiant exploits, encountred with *Anguish,* King of Ireland, *Goranus* King of Scotland, *Cador,* Duke of Cornewall, and with other Princes, and wanne great honour. This *Anguish* claimed tribute from *Marke,* King of Cornewall, that formerly was wonne by combate, and sent *Morogh* (whom *Caxton* calleth *Marhaus*) the Queene of Leinsters brother, who was also one of King *Arthurs* Knights, to demand it; he

was a valiant Gentleman, often tryed, and ever quitted himselfe with honour. The Frenchmen calleth him *Le Morhoult d'Ireland;* and a Citizen of London thus blazoneth his Armes.

In silver shield, on fesse of pee-
ces five throughout the same,
He bare a Lyon Rampant red
and arme greene, whose name
Might seeme to signifie in truth,
each mighty enterprise,
A prey most fit for his courage,
as in the Irish guise.

Marke, King of Cornewall denieth the tribute, offereth the combate, and Sir *Tristram* undertaketh it for him. *Morogh* for himselfe pleaded that he was to encounter with none, unlesse he were a King or Queene, a Prince or Princesse sonne; the circumstances being considered and agreed upon, the combatants meete, and fiercely fight, the battaile was a long time doubtfull; in the end, Sir *Tristram* gave Sir *Morogh* with his sword, a sore blow, that a piece of the edge stucke in his scull, whereupon the combate ended, *Morogh* returned into Ireland, and shortly after died of the wound. This doth *Caxton* and the booke of *Houth* deliver at large. But I may not end thus with Sir *Tristram,* he also was sore wounded with a Speare, whose head was venomed, and could not be cured untill that by counsaile he repaired to the country

where the venome had beene confected. Whereupon he came to Ireland, and to King *Anguish* his Court, and having great skill upon the Harpe, he recreated himselfe, delighted the house, and fell in loue with *La Bell Isod* the Kings daughter, and she with him. In processe of time the Queene had learned that he had given her brother *Morogh* his deaths wound, and comparing the piece of the swords edge which was taken out of the scull, with his sword, found them to agree, and banished him the land. Not long after upon conference had with *Marke*, King of Cornewall, of marriage, and commending the beautie and vertues of *La Bel Isod* spoken of before, hee commeth to Ireland to intreate of marriage betweene King *Marke* and her. And having effected his purpose, taketh her with him to Cornewall, where *Marke* espoused her with great ioy and solemnity; but the old secret love betweene *Tristram* and her, had taken such impression in both, and so inflamed their hearts, that it could not easily be quenched, so that in processe of time, *Marke* espied it, and in his furious jealousie, slue him as he played upon the Harpe to recreate *La Bel Isod;* and thus as his love began with the Harpe, so it ended at the Harpe; it is recorded that *Isod* came to his grave and swounded. She was (saith mine Author) so faire a woman, that hardly who so beheld her, could not chuse but be enamoured with her. In Dublin upon the wall of the Citie, is a Castle called *Isods* towre, and not farre from Dublin, a Chappell with a Village named Chappell-Isod: the originall cause of the name I doe

not finde, but it is coniectured, that her father King *Anguish*, that doted on her, builded them in remembrance of her, the one for her recreation, and the other for the good of her soule.

About the time that King *Arthur* raigned, lived many famous men of Irish birth, renowned for their great learning and sanctitie, and commended by divers Antiquaries, both at home and abroad to the posteritie. But before I come to speake of them, I must first make mention of *Congellus* a Britaine by birth, who builded the Monasterie of Bangor, not farre from West-Chester, which was called the Colledge of Christian Philosophers, and became the first Abbot thereof himselfe, in the dayes of King *Arthur*, *anno Dom.* 530. I make mention of him, because *Bernard* in the life of *Malachias*, reporteth this Colledge or Abbey which he built, to have beene the head or principall Abbey of all the Monasteries in Europe, the seminarie or bee-hive of many thousands of Monkes, after the Apostolike manner, getting their living with the sweate of their browes, and the labour of their owne hands. And the rather for that he had to his Disciples of Irish birth, *Columbanus* that travailed France, Germanie, and Italie, *Breudan* that furnished Ireland and Scotland with holy men, with *Luanus* and others, of whom I shall have occasion to speak in their places. This *Congellus* also (*Bernard* is mine Author) founded the Abbey of Benchor, *alias* Bangor, here in Vlster, where many singular learned men of Irish birth were

trayned up, yea Britaines, Saxons, and Scots also, and dispersed themselves farre and nigh, (as hereafter shall more plainely appeare) into forraigne countries, converted and confirmed thousands in the true faith. The which Abbey of Benchor, was afterward destroyed by Pyrates, and nine hundred Monks slaine in one day, and so continued waste unto the time of *Malachias* Bishop of Armach, whereof I will speake hereafter.

Yet in an ancient manuscript Legend of Ireland, I finde that this *Congellus* the Abbot was borne in Dail Naraid in Vlster, of honourable Parents, and upon some displeasure conceived, forsooke his native soile, came to Mounster to Saint *Fintan* Abbot of Cluoyn Ednech at the foote of Mons Blandina, where he was ioyfully received, who after long instruction, through the counsaile of *Fintan*, returned to his native soile, and entred the Monasterie of Saint *Karan* in Cluayn Mac Noyse, where Bishop *Lugidus* gave him orders; and that in a while after, he founded the famous Abbey of Benchor in Vlster, in the country called *Altitudo ultorum*, to the East sea (as I reade in the life *Mocoemog*) containing three thousand Monkes, and that seven yeeres after, hee went into Britaine, and founded there a Monasterie that swarmed with Monkes, as formerly in part is delivered, whither out of all places by sea and land, they flocked unto him, for the fame of learning which there was professed. He, when hee had settled his affaires there, returned into Ireland, and now resteth at his monasterie of Benchor. The

fame of both Monasteries or Colledges of Christian Philosophers and famous men thither frequenting, and entercoursing with domesticall and forraigne students, mee thinkes, should reconcile Britaine and Ireland now being in one, and breed an agreement among Antiquaries.

Brendan, among others, was famous at this time, borne in Connaght, brought up under *Hercus* a Bishop, and directed by *Barintus* a Monke, he was excellently seene in the liberall sciences, and travailed into Britaine to the Abbey of Bangor, where hee learned the monasticall rules of *Congellus*, from thence he went to Llancarvan and builded a Monasterie, became the father of three thousand Monkes that got their living with the labour of their hands, and sweate of their browes, left to oversee them *Machutus* and *Molochus*, travailed over Ireland and Scotland with other countries; after seven yeeres peregrination, he returned to Ireland, and became Bishop of Kerry, (of old called Kiaragi, but now Ardfertensis) where he ended his dayes, and lyeth buried at Cluenarca, otherwise called Luarcha. Yet in the life of *Ruadanus*, I finde hee was buried at Cluanferta. Other things that *Capgrave*, the martyrologe, and *Bale* have, I omit.

When Saint *Brendan* was olde, Saint *Fynbarry* was a childe, hee is now the Patrone of the Cathedrall Church of Corke; his Legend runneth thus: There was a certaine King in Ireland, called *Tegernatus*,

who had to his handmaid, a very beautifull Damosell; this King gave charge throughout his dominion, that none should be so bold as to touch her, for it was supposed he kept her for his owne tooth. Yet (saith the Legend) one of his souldiers, whose name was *Amorgen*, (a blacke Smith) got her with childe, the which being brought to light, and the time of her travaile nigh approaching, *Tegernatus* commanded that *Amorgen* the father, the faire harlot the mother, (with her great bellie) should bee cast into the fire, and burned to ashes. But (saith the Legend) they were all miraculously deliuered, and the childe safely brought into the world. At his baptisme he was named *Loanus*, but in a while after, three religious men that had the charge of him (by reason of the beautie of his white lockes, and gratious aspect) called him in Irish, *Fuenbarrah*, whom now wee call *Fynbarry*. He was brought up under Bishop *Torpereus*, the disciple of *Gregorie*, Bishop of Rome, and was conversant with *Fatturus*, (another Legend calleth him *Fyachna*) a King in Ireland, who did alot him a certaine portion of land in his country. Bishop *Torpereus* gave him orders, after which he went (saith the Legend) into Albania now called Scotland, did much good there, and went from thence to Rome, and was consecrated Bishop in the time of *Gregorie* the first, then he returned to Ireland, landed on the South side of the river Lee, where one *Edo* a Noble man gave him a parcell of ground, where (with the aide of many good men) he built the old Citie of Corke, and

the Cathedrall Church, annexing thereto a faire Church-yard, wherein now standeth a watch Towre, builded by the Danes. The Legend speaketh of a priviledge granted to that Church-yard, which I take to have beene brought in through the covetousnesse of the Priests: That what faithfull soever being penitent, shall bee buried there, shall not after this life, feele the torments of hell; as if every faithfull penitent Christian were not freed from hell, wheresoever he be buried. But let us proceed: *Torpereus* Bishop of Cloan his Schoole-master, was the first man that was buried in that Church-yard. After this, *Finbarry* went to *Calangus* a reverend man, then Abbot of Cloane, and concluded betweene themselves, that in the feare of God, they would both be buried in one place, and so indeed it fell out, for there *Finbarry* fell sicke, received the Sacrament at the hands of *Calangus*, ended his dayes, and was brought to the Church-yard of old Corke, and there interred; shortly after, followed *Calangus*, and there Bishop *Torperus* the first Bishop of Cloane, *Finbarry* the first Bishop of Corke, and *Calangus* the first Abbot of Cloane, keepe together in the dust of the earth, waiting for the resurrection at the last day. The fabulous circumstances of the Legend I leave to old Wives and long winters nights; yet to satisfie the reader that I met with the Originall, I will lay down part of the Latine rithmes sung yeerely on his day, being the 25. of September, not worthy of translation into English, and here they follow.

Infantis clari matremque patremque ligatum
Ambo Rex quondam, flammis præceperat uri;
Interea mirum bellum gessere elementa,
Ignis edax stupuit, non audens mandere ligna.
Hic nondum genitus jam matris ventre moratus,
O nova res! miris cepit clamare loquelis,
Obstupuit rex, &c.
Ad Christi verbum ducentes tres seniores
Infantem secum nitidum, vultuque decorum,
Dogmata ut sacra cunabulo disceret evo
Contigit ut nimio, solis fervore sitiret;
Tunc senibus quidam præceperat ire ministrum
Vt potum puero cerva deduceret almo
Statim cerva petens vitulum lac fudit abundè
Et potum, &c.
Rex quondam retinens plenam turpedine prolem
Luminis expertem natum, mutamque puellam
Præclarum Christi famulum iam rogitavit
Vt natos miseros ditaret munere caro
Illico respexit cæcus, & muta locuta
Ad natum regis cæcum, mutamque puellam
Fynbarry precibus salvavit conditor almus.
Sanctus Fynbarrus quondam cum rege sedebat,
Cumque salutabant læti sese, vice versa,
Audierant fletum tristem, magnumque lamentum:
At rex confestim turbatus, heu mea, dixit,
Regalis conjux nunc mortem gustat amaram.
Tunc dixit Christi famulus, depone merorem,
Namque potest dominus vitam donare defunctis.
Fynbarry precibus tunc fœmina viva resurgit.

Fynbarrus residens Rex atque sub arboris umbra:
Tunc placuit Regi miracula cernere quædam
Auxiliante Deo Fynbarrus quæ faciebat;
Interea corylus gignebat tempore veris
Maturos fructus, valdè largèque cadebant.
Miratur corylum vernalem gignere fructum.

With many such strange things with which I will no longer trouble the reader, nor keepe him from that which followeth.

Now commeth in the confused name of *Colme, Columba, Columbanus, Columkillus, and Colmannus;* who all lived at one time, about the dayes of King *Arthure,* and were all of Irish birth, but are greatly mistaken by the Antiquaries.

The first called *Columbanus* by *Adamannus* and *Capgrave,* in the life of *Columba,* was, as they write, *Episcopus Laginensis,* a Bishop of Leinster, but the Diocesse of which he was Bishop, I finde not named.

The second by *Beda* (whom, for authority and antiquitie, I reverence) is called *Columbanus presbiter & Abbas,* Priest and Abbot, whom *Capgraue* calleth *Columba,* borne of Noble Parentage in Ireland. *Adamannus* who wrote his life, saith, his father hight *Feidlimyd,* the sonne of *Fergus,* his mother *Ethnea,* and that the second yeere after the bloudie battaile of Cule-Dreibne, he came to Britaine in the time of

Gildas sapiens, and converted the Pictes. But before his departure out of Ireland, he founded a Monasterie (saith *Beda*) *à copia roborum,* in the Scottish tongue called *Dearmagh. Capgrave* termeth it *Roboretum,* the grove of Okes, In Britaine saith *Beda)* he builded a Monasterie in the Iland called Hu, *(Capgrave* calleth it Iona) where he lyeth buried, ending his dayes at the age of 77. yeeres, whose death *Aidanus* King of Scots greatly lamented. *Beda* reporteth that some wrote of him, which work came not to his hands, and that in the observation of Easter he followed no other direction, then hee found in holy Scripture. Here (gentle reader) two scruples are to be removed from among our Irish Antiquaries; the first *Beda* dissolveth, namely that of him the name of *Columkilli* came in; *Columba,* [h] *now a dayes (saith he) of some men compounding Cella and Columba, is called Columcelli,* and in *Capgrave* we reade *Columkillius.* The second scruple is, where *Beda* writeth that he was buried in the Isle Hu, the Antiquaries of Ireland record his funerall to have beene at Downe, (as formerly I have written) in one Tombe with *Patricke* and *Brigide;* I hold both may be true, namely that he was buried in the Isle before spoken of, and being thence translated into Downe in Ireland, as *Brigide* was before) now resteth there in one grave with *Patricke* and her.

The third *Columbanus,* otherwise called *Columba,*

[h] *Beda Ang. hist. lib.* 5. *cap.* 10.

of Irish birth, was a most famous man of that time for learning and vertue, eternized in writing by *Ionas* an Abbot his disciple, also by *Capgrave, Bale, Surius, Baronius, Lippeloo* and *Stanihurst.* In his youth he was mightily tempted with the feminine sex, *nihil tam sanctum religione,* (saith mine Author) *tamque custodia clausum, quod penetrare libido nequeat.*

He forsooke his native soile, went to *Congellus,* Abbot of Bangor, continued there many yeeres, and having formerly taken with him twelve of his country men, called twelve followers, hee went into France, and made them Cabanes, after the Irish manner, in stead of Monasteries. Many fabulous things are reported of Wolves, Beares, and Fowles of the ayre, that they had no power over him. When he had continued together with his followers, twenty yeeres in one place, he was banished thence, and being desirous to returne to Ireland, *Clotarius* sonne to *Chilpericke* staid him, yet he tooke his course into Italie, where *Agilulphus* King of Lombardie received him most honourably, and in Italie hee died, saith *Beda* in his Martyrologe, though *Capgrave* write it was in Almaine, whose report of him I may not omit. He builded (saith he) certaine famous Monasteries in Almaine, into the which, (as it is said) they admit onely Irish men unto this day. He wrote (saith *Lippeloo*) a booke against the Arians. *Bale* reckoneth his other workes that he published.

In psalterium commentar ..... lib. 1.
Collationes ad Monachos..... lib. 1.
De moribus monachorum metrice..... lib. 1. *Hæc præcepta legat.*
Epistolas ad Commilitones ..... lib. 1.
Monasteriorum methodus ..... lib. 1.
Adversus Theodoricum regem adulterum lib. 1.

This *Columbanus* had many learned men of Irish birth, brought up under him. The Martyrologe of Sarum remembreth one *Deicolus* an Abbot. *Capgrave* and *Walafridus Strabo* commend one *Gallus*, whom *Columbanus* left behinde him in Almaine. And when *Gunzo* Duke of Suevia would have made him Bishop of Constance, he preferred one *Iohn* his Deacon and disciple, to the roomth, and kept the desert himselfe. *Surius* writeth, Italie glorieth of *Columbanus*, Almaine of *Gallus*, and Flanders of *Kilianus*. Hee wrote, as *Bale* remembreth,

In electione Iohannis..... *Orat.* 1. *Sempiternus & inæstimabilis Deus.*
Gubernandæ ecclesiæ formam lib. 1.

Ionas likewise his disciple, is by *Tritemius* cõmended and reckoned among the great learned men of Ireland, who at the request of certaine brethren, penned for the good of posteritie.

Vitam Abbatis Columbani..... lib. 1.
Vitam Attalæ Monachi..... lib. 1.
Vitam Eustachij Abbatis ..... lib. 1.
Vitam Bertolfi Abbatis. .....

All are found among *Beda* his workes.

There was a fourth *Columbanus* a Monke in Luxonium, countriman and kinsman to *Columbanus* going before, who dyed in his presence; so much I finde of him in *Capgrave*, and no more of him either there or in any other.

Colmannus I must referre to his place, and *Colme* I must leave to the vulgar and corrupted speech; yet in one Author I finde, that *Colme* is buried with *Patricke* and *Brigide*, which must be understood to be *Columbanus* spoken of before.

About the latter dayes of Saint *Martin*, Bishop of Toures in France, *Ninianus* a Britaine (whom *Beda* worthily commendeth) comming from Rome, was made Bishop of Lyndsey, Lindesfernensis, whom *Aidus* (otherwise called *Aidanus* and *Ædanus*) *Finanus* and *Colmannis*, all three of Irish birth, orderly succeeded in the dayes of King *Arthur*.

About this time, *Carthagus* commonly called *Mocudu*, *Mochudu* and *Mocodi* was the first Bishop of Lismore, he descended of the sept of *Fergusius*, the most potent Prince of Vlster, whose of-spring were dispersed over Ireland, his father matched with the royall bloud of Mounster, he had to his Schoolemaster one *Carthagus* a Bishop. It is alledged in his Legend, *(penes authorem sit fides)* that it was prophecied, he should become a great man, and build two cities; the first, Raithe (or Raichen) in Feraceall;

the second, Lismore. This diversitie of names comming upon accidents, is known unto them that have skill in the old Irish. It is remembred in his life, that in his youth, 30. Virgins were in love with him, and that he prayed unto God, to turne their carnall into spirituall love, which was granted, yet (saith mine Author) to requite their former love, he builded them all Cells, and they dwelled in his parish, and conversed with him all the dayes of their lives. He had disciples that proved rare men, *Mochue*, *Mocoemoge*, *Gobbanus*, *Straphanus*, *Lazreaanus*, *Molva*, *Aidanus*, *Fiachus*, *Findeling*, with others. He was compelled to forsake Raithen, and travailed west-ward, untill he came to the river Nem, now called Band more, falling from the mountaine Chua, and running into the sea, whereupon Lismore is builded, and given to Saint *Mocodi*. For the Lord of that country, *Nandeisi Melochtrig*, the son of *Cokthacg*, before witnesse, granted him that seate, to build both Church and Citie, where he resteth, and whom one *Molcolmog* succeeded.

Machutus otherwise called *Maclovius*, though *Bale* and *Capgrave* call him a Britaine, yet I finde that he was borne in Ireland, and that he was the sonne of one *Lovi*, and therefore called *Maclovy*. *Molanus* writeth, that he crossing the seas, and having good successe, led an Eremites life in Britaine, and was the disciple of Saint *Brendan* of Ireland. He accompanied with one *Aaron*, and kept with him in an Island of his name, (saith *Molanus*) called *Aaron*, but now

I finde it in the North-west parts of Ireland, belonging to the Earle of Ormond, called the Isles of Aran. Lastly, he was made Bishop of Aletha, and is honoured at Gemblacum in Flanders, where the Church (say they) is patronized by Saint *Machutus, alias Maclovius,* hee lived (saith *Bale* [1]) about the yeere 540. what time *Arthur* commanded Britaine.

Kentegernus then also lived, and now is remembred in Ireland and in Wales: the Martyrologe of Sarum reporteth, that his Mother wist not how, when, nor by whom he was gotten, yet was shee an holy woman, (saith mine Author) and much loved our Lady. She was cast downe headlong from a rocke (saith mine Author) into the sea, and tooke no hurt, then put into a Boate alone without Sayle or Oare, came into Ireland, and presently travailed with child. He became an Abbot of 965. Monkes, kept company with Saint *David,* and in the end was a Bishop.

Ruadanus borne in Ireland, of Noble Parentage, his father hight *Byrra,* of the of-spring of *Dnach,* but inhabited the West part of Leinster, of olde called Osraigie, but now Ossorie, whose sept is called Dnachs, in those parts unto this day. He left Ossorie, and hearing of the fame of Saint *Fynnan,* a wise and a learned man, dwelling in his owne towne, (so saith mine Author) commonly called Clonard, of Cluayn jarhaird in Meath, and confines of Leinster,

[1] *Io Bale cent.* 1.

resorted to him, who for the space of certaine yeeres, brought him up in sacred letters, gave him orders, and sent him to Muscraytrie in Mounster, where he was borne, where also he builded a Monasterie, which standeth to this day, and is maintained by the Lords of the soile. From thence he went to a place called Lothra, where he builded another Monasterie, and lyeth there wayting the generall resurrection. Saint *Brendan* at the same time builded a Cell not farre from that place, called Tulach Brenayd, that is, (saith mine Author) *Collis Brendani*, left Ruadan the charge thereof, tooke his blessing, and begun his travaile, as the Legends at large doe write. *Ruadanus* is said to have written these bookes in the Latine tongue.

De miraculosa arbore ..... *lib.* 1
De mirabili fontium in Hibernia natura ..... *lib.* 1
Contra Diarmoyd regem ..... *lib.* 1

Saint *Faghua* lived in the time of *Finbarry*, and founded a Monasterie upon the sea in the south part of Ireland, where he became Abbot, the which seat grew to be a Citie, wherein a Cathedrall Church was builded, and patronized by *Faghua*. This towne of olde called Rossai Lithry, but now Roskarbry, hath beene walled about by a Lady of that country, but now according to the fruits of warre, among the Carties, O Driscales, and other septs, scarce can the old foundation be seene. There hath beene there of old (saith mine Author) *magnum studium 'scholarium, a great Vniversitie*, whereto resorted all the South-west

parts of Ireland for learnings sake. Saint *Brendan* Bishop of Kery, read publikely the liberall sciences in that schoole. Farther of *Faghua* or *Faghuanus*, mine Author recordeth, that he being *sapiens & probus*, a wise and a good man, by mishap fell blinde, and with many prayers, and salt teares, desired of God, restitution of his sight, for the good of his Covent, and the Students brought up under him; a voyce he heard, (saith mine Anthor) goe get some of the breast milke of *Broanus* the artificers wife, wash thine eyes therewith, and thou shalt see. He went to a Prophetesse called *Yta* or *Ytha*, to learne how to come by this woman, and it fell out that this woman was her sister, hee found her out, washed his eyes, and recovered his sight; whether it be true or no, I know not, I report it as I finde it. This Saint *Yta* was an Abbattesse, whose originall was of Meth, but she was borne in Mounster.

Vpon the storie of *Faghua* dependeth the Legend of *Motoeinoge*, interpreted in Latine, *meus pulcher iuvenis*, *my beautifull young man*, who proved learned, an Abbot and a Bishop, being the childe of those breasts that washed *Faghua* his eyes; many admirable things are reported of him wherewith I will not trouble the reader. He conversed with *Coemanus* or *Chemanus*, *Cannicus*, *Finianus* Abbas, *Colman* a Bishop, *Daganus* Abbot of Inbyr-dayle in Leinster, *Mocobe* his owne disciple, *Illepius* the disciple of *Mocobe*, *Molna*, *Mofecta*, *Cuminus longus*, the sonne of *Fia-*

chua, and *Cronanne*, who lyeth buried at Rosscre, *Luctichernus* and *Lazerianus*, with *Yta*, Patronesse of *Hua Conaill*, & her Abbot of *Cluayn Mac Noys*, & Abbot *Engus*, & Abbot *Congallus*, of Vlster, *Mocoeinoge* resteth in the county of Typperary, by a long foord in the way from Kilkenny to the Holy Crosse (as they cal it) where sometime was a Citie & a Monasterie called Liath, but now a Village bearing his name, Liath Mocoeinoge. He had in his life time much adoe with *Coemanus*, *Bledin*, *Ronanis*, *Foelanus*, *Diarmoda*, *Suglue*, Lords of Ely, (now called Ely O Carroll) and with *Falke Fland*, King of Mounster, whose chiefe Pallace was in Cashell.

Saint *Coeingenus* shall next be spoken of, in Latine as much to say, as *pulchrogenitus*, he was ordered by Bishop *Lugidus*, & led an heremeticall life in a Cell, in a place of old called Cluayn Duach, where he was borne and brought up. Now the place is called Gleanddaloch (saith mine Author) *Vallis duorum stagnorum, a valley of two pooles or standing waters*, where one *Dymnach* a Lord of the soile founded a Cathedrall Church, in the honour of Saint *Coeingenus*, ioyned therunto a faire Church-yard, with other edifices, and divers buildings, the which in mine Author, *legenda sancti Coeingeni)* is termed *civitas de Glandelogh*. In the life of Saint *Patricke* I finde, that hee prophecied of two rare men, *Albanus* and *Coeingenus*, and that this should be a Bishop, and that one *Molingus* should succeed him, I finde this true in the See of Glande-

logh. *Coeingenus* was a great learned man, and wrote these bookes.

De Britannorum origine.... lib. 1 *Bryto sive Brutus.*
De Hibero & Hermone..... lib. 1 *Hyber & Hermon.*

Molva before mentioned in the life of *Mocoeinoge*, (of his mother called *Lugidus*, but of his master, *Congallus*) was a great learned man, borne in Mounster, in Huafi, of the sept of *Corcach*. His father hight *Carthach, alias Coche*, his mother *Sochla*, that is, Large; hee was brought up under *Congallus* in Vlster, in his Abbey of Benchor, where he received orders, and was sent into his native soile of Mounster, for the good of his country. Hee came to the schoole of Saint *Finnian*, in the confines of Leinster, and profited there very much, from thence he went to mount Luacha in the South-west part of the river Synna, together with his disciples, and craved of *Foelanus*, Lord of that soile, license there to inhabite, who refused him, so that he went to his kindred in Osraigi, (now called Ossorie) who received him ioyfully. In a while after, he went to mount Smoil, now called *mons Blandina*, where he cast his staffe, and builded a Monasterie in a place called Rosse Bualead, by licence of *Beraclus* Lord of that soile, (in Latine, *Dux Laigy*) where he decreed, saith the Legend, *ut nulla mulier ibi semper intraret, that no woman should alwaies enter into it*, which was, and may well be observed to this day, yea while the world endureth. In the same

place was afterwards a famous citie builded, called Cluayn ferta Molua, in Latine, *latibulum mirabile sancti Molvæ, the secret habitation of Saint Molva.* He conversed with Saint *Flannanus, Molayssi, alias Molassus, Sethua* Bishop of Saigir or Sagri, where it lyeth, I finde not, but by all likelyhood it should not be farre from Cluayn Ferta, with *Moedog* Archbishop of Leinster, *Einenus* Abbot of Rosse Mac Treoin in Kenselach, upon the river Berua, founded by the olde Saint *Abbanus,* with *Daganus* Abbot of Ardgabraine in Nandesi, called Achad Dagani, Saint *Cronan in insula Cree, Stellanus* his disciple, *Manchenus* and *Munnu,* Abbot of Techmunnu in Kenselach in the South part of Leinster. Hee ended the way of all flesh, and resteth in the Monasterie of Cluayn Ferta, where one *Lachtanus* succeeded him. He is said to have wrought many wonders, and if the reader laugh not, I will penne him one. *Molva* in an evening among the cattell of his monasterie, heard a company of Wolves howling for their prey; hee was moved with pitty, called them to him, washed their feet, made them a feast, and gave them lodging. The Legend saith further, that they thenceforth familiarly conversed with the Heard keepers, and chased away other Wolves and theeves. He wrote

Regulus Monachorum, confirmed by *Greg.* 1.

Munnu spoken of in the former Legend, came of good parentage, of the house of *Neill,* his father was

Tuichanus, his mother *Fedelyr,* he was brought up under *Silell* a learned man in the North of Ireland. Hee proved a singular learned man, and wrote a booke *de pascate,* which was in his time in question, he outlived *Congallus* and *Columba,* and conversed with *Baithenus* and *Lazerianus,* Abbot of Leighlin, he dwelt a while in Ely, from thence hee went to Athcayn in Kinselach, and in Achad Liachtrom he builded a monasterie called Teach-Munnu, *alias* Thech Munnu, where hee gave up the ghost, 12. of the Kalends of November, and yet the Martyrologes place him the sixt Kalend of the same moneth. In his storie I finde mention of a controversie betweene him and *Lazerianus,* who builded a Monasterie, *In stagno Hiberniæ Dai ynis, in Latine, bovis insula,* in the North part of Ireland, so it is written in the life of *Ædanus;* afterwards he came to the river Berba (now called the Barrow) and there became Abbot of fifteene hundred Monkes. In their time, the old controversie about the observation of Easter, was vehemently urged of all sides; a great disputation and parlie was appointed in Campo Albo (saith mine Author) upon the Barrow. *Munnu* gave this offer, brother *Lazerianus* (saith he) let us not spend time, neither trouble this people with this tedious question; choose for the tryall of the truth, one of these three things, take two bookes, one of the old, the other of the new Easter, cast them into the fire, looke which the fire saveth, let the truth rest there; or take two Monkes, [k] one of thy side, another

[k] If they were as fat in those daies, as most of them proved after, there would have beene old frying,

of mine, and cast them both into an house set on fire, he that commeth forth safe, let him carry the truth. Or let us goe to the grave of some holy Monke, and raise the dead, and stand to his sentence, when we shall keepe Easter this yeere. *Lazerianus* refused his offers, and said, I will no longer contend with thee brother *Munnu*, for I know thy worthinesse and sanctitie is such, that if thou command the mount Margee over against us to remove to this Campus albus, and this ground to remove thither, I am of opinion it will bee so, thus they broke up and did nothing.

Cannicus or *Kennicus* was borne in the North of Ireland (in Connaught as I gather) his father was called *Lugaid Lechteag* a Poet, his mother hight *Maula* or *Mella*, hee was trayned up in Britaine in the christian schoole of *Docus*, thence he went to Rome, and took orders in Italie, returned into Ireland, preached the Gospell most zealously, and (saith his Legend) wrought many miracles. He conversed with great learned men ,namely *Eugenius*, Bishop of Ardratha, *Baithenus* and others. *Adamanus* in the life of *Columba* formerly spoken of, and the second of the name, writeth (whereby I gather the time of the learned men of that age) how that at one time, *Cannicus*, *Congallus*, *Brendanus*, *Cormacus*, and *Fynbarry* visited *Columba*, and were all present when he celebrated the divine mysterie. *Colmanus* the sonne of *Feraid*, Lord of Osraide or Ossragy, now called Ossorie, was *Kannicus* his deare friend, who after he had received the faith, gave him many villages, where

he builded Cels and Monasteries, but chiefely at Achadbo, where he resteth. When the time of his departure out of this sinfull world drew nigh, he sent for *Fintan* the Abbot, and received at his hands the blessed Sacrament, and so departed the fift of the Ides of October.

In remembrance of this *Cannicus*, there is now a famous towne in Leinster called Kilkenny, parted into the English and Irish towne, with a small fresh or brooke that falleth into the Nure; the chiefe Lord under the King, is the Earle of Ormond and Ossorie; the English towne is governed by a Soveraigne, Bayliffes and Burgesses, the Irish towne is governed by the Bishop of Ossorie and his officers, and the Bishopricke of Ossorie, whose principall see was first in Ely, and called Sire Keran (as formerly I have written in the life of *Keranus*) afterward translated to Achadbo, is now setled in Kilkenny. The first founder of Saint *Kennies* Church there, was *Hugh Mapilton*, the fift Bishop of that See, after the conquest, about the yeer 1240. There was also about the same time, a Church builded over against the towne, upon the East side of the Nure, in the honour of Saint *Maula* the mother of Saint *Kenny*, whose memory is continued in that towne, by her plague that fell among them, and thus it was.

There was a great plague in that towne, and such as died thereof being bound with Wythes upon the

Beere, were buried in Saint *Maulas* Churchyard; after that the infection ceased, women and maides went thither to dance, and in stead of handkerchiefes and napkins to keepe them together in their round, it is said they tooke those Wythes to serve their purpose. It is generally received, (take it gentle reader as cheape as you finde it) that *Maula* was angry for prophaning her Church-yard, and with the Wythes infected the dancers so, that shortly after in Kilkenny, there died of the sicknesse, man, woman and childe.

Ædanus (divers times before spoken of) was of honourable parentage, borne in Connaght, his father hight *Sothna*, his mother, *Ethne*, of the sept of *Amluygh*, his companions were *Molassus*, *alias Lazerianus*, and *Airedus*, also he conversed much with Saint *David*, Bishop of Menevia, (now called Saint *Davids*) and is there called *Moedock;* this *David* was his master. The martyrologe of Sarum calleth him *Maeldock;* my Author yeeldeth the reason, writing how that his mother conceiving with childe of him, his father dreamed that he saw a starre fall from heaven upon his wife, the mother of this *Ædanus*, and therefore when he was borne, he was called in Latine, *filius stellæ*, in Irish, *Moedog*, that is, the sonne of the starre. Master *Fox* writeth, that hee builded the Monasterie of Maibrose by the floud of Twide. *David* the holy man advised him to repaire to his native soile for the good of his country, after that hee had for a good space followed the Christian Britaines against

the faithlesse Saxons. He came to Ireland to *Anmyre*, King of Connaght, from thence to Leinster, and builded Monasteries in Kinselach and Cluayn More, what time *Edus* or *Edanus*, the sonne of *Anmyre* King of Connaght, levied warre against *Brandub* King of Leinster, in which battaile, *Edus* and all his Nobilitie of Connaght were slaine, and *Brandub* became Monarch of Ireland. After this he went to the North of England, and was made Bishop of Lyndsey, *Lyndesfernensis: Capgrave* maketh two of one *Ædanus*, the one an Abbot, the other a Bishop, and to reconcile the dissonance, he was first an Abbot, afterwards a Bishop, so writeth *Bale*. *Beda* deliver-eth singular commendations of him, the which to avoid prolixitie I omit. After all this, hee returned to Leinster, to *Brandub* the Monarch, who upon speciall liking of his vertues, gave him a parcell of land, where he builded a Monasterie; the place is called Ferna, now Fernes, where both Church and Monasterie are patronized (as they write) by Saint *Moedog*, where afterwards both *Brandub* and *Moedog* were buried, whereof the words in the life of *Ædanus, alias Moedog*, are these. *Magnas dedit rex oblationes Sancto Moedog, & agrum in quo vir Dei construxit monasterium quod dicitur Ferna, in quo Sanctus Moedog sepultus est, & rex Brandub, & genus ejus post eum ibi semper sepelitur. Et magna civitas in honore sancti Moedog ibi crevit, quæ eodem nomine vocatur Ferna. Deinde facta Synodo magnatum in terra Laginensium, decrevit Rex Brandub, & tam Laici quam*

Clerici, ut Archiepiscopatus omnium Laginensium, semper esset in sede & cathedra sancti Moedog, & tunc sanctus Moedog a multis catholicis consecratus est Archiepiscopus. The King gave many gifts to Saint Moedog, and a parcell of ground, where the man of God builded a Monasterie, called Ferna, where Saint Moedog is buried, and King Brandub, and his posteritie after him, is there continually buried. And a great Citie in the honour of Saint Moedog is there risen, the which by the same name is called Ferna. Afterwards a Synode or Parliament of the Nobilitie of Leinster being called together, King Brandub decreed together with the Laitie and Clergie, that the Archbishopricke of all Leinster should alwaies be in the seate and chayre of Saint Moedog, and then Saint Moedog by many Catholikes was consecrated Archbishop. According to which indeed the Legend of Sain *Molva* he is called *Archiepiscopus Laginensium.*

David of Menevia being of great yeeres, desired to see him before his death; *Moedog* visited him, and returned into Ireland in a troublesome time, namely when all Leinster was in Armes to revenge upon *Saran* (a Nobleman of Leinster) the death of King *Brandub*, whom he had traiterously murthered. This *Brandub*, the sonne of *Eatach*, of the progenie or sept of *Enna*, of whom *Censelach* hath originall, had a most honourable funerall, and was greatly lamented, and intombed in the Church-yard of Saint *Moedog*, in his Citie Ferna, where his progenie, the royall

bloud of the Kings of Leinster is interred; after his death, Earle *Saran* (so mine Author calleth him) being tormented in conscience, came to the Kings tombe, lamented the horrible treason he had committed, and could finde no rest to his dying day.

In the time of this *Moedog*, the three Kings of Tuomond, Connaght, and Vlster, with an Armie of foure and twenty thousand men, came to Leinster, to revenge the death of *Edus* before spoken of. The King of Leinster called *Moedog*, and the Clergie, and commanded them all to pray while he fought, and, saith the storie, God gave the Leinster men the victory, and their enemies were overthrowne.

It is remembred of this *Ædanus*, how that one comming unto him, and desiring him to assigne him a Confessor, his answer was; *Thou needst no Confessor but God, who knoweth the secrets of thy heart, but if thou wilt have a witnesse of thy doings, goe to one* Molva *a learned man, who shall direct thee in thy course.* And yet (gentle reader) I may not overslip one thing, the which *Capgrave* reporteth in the life of *Ædanus* or *Aidanus*, (or *Moedog*) namely, how that (for all the sanctitie of the Prelates in those dayes) Satan, with all the infernall spirits, sent greeting, with great thankes, unto the Ecclesiasticall state upon earth, in dreadfull characters. For that they wanting no aide in their delights from hellish places, sent such a number of damned soules into the sulphu-

reall pits, through their remisnesse in life, and slacknesse in preaching, as in former ages had not beene seene. Whosoever devised the course, it forceth not greatly, the matter might seeme odious if it contained no truth.

Finnan in Wales, (as my Authors report) called *Gwyn*, was born at Ardez, he travelled forraigne countries, came to his native soile, was Bishop of Farne, saith *Beda*, baptized *Penda* King of Mercia, consecrated *Cedd*, Bishop of East Saxons, and lyeth buried at Cuningham in Scotland, called of the Britaines, Kilgwinin. There was also one *Finań* an Abbot, borne in Mounster, sent by Saint *Brendan* to Smoir, now called *Mons Blandina*, to inhabite there, who came afterwards to Corcodizbue, where hee was borne, builded Cels and Monasteries for religious men, contended with *Falbe Fland*, King of Mounster. A third *Finan* there was, who was master of *Ruadanus* a great learned man, and dwelt at Cluayn jarhaird in Meath.

Colmannus, whose life *Bale* writeth at large, was a godly learned man, borne in Ireland, the sonne of one *Fiachra*, of the bloud Royall, and highly commended of *Beda*, hee was brought up after the Apostolike rules of *Congellus*, he succeeded *Finan* in the Bishopricke of Farne, *alias*, Linsey. In his time there was great stirre about the observation of Easter, when some alledged custome, and some urged the

authoritie of Rome; he pleaded the Gospell both against this stir, and the like trouble that rose about the shaving of Priests crownes, the which he reiected (saith *Beda*) and seeing that he could not prevaile, forsooke his Bishopricke, and went with certaine Scots and Saxons into the Hebrydes, where he ended his dayes.

Beda writeth, how that in the yeere 664. there fell strange accidents upon the eclipse of the Sunne, (which was the third of May) in England and Ireland, and a great mortalitie in both lands, in the time of *Finan* and *Colman* the godly Bishops. Gentle reader, thou shalt heare himselfe speake. *The plague pressed sore that Iland of Ireland, no lesse then England; there were then at that time, many of noble parentage, and likewise of the meane sort of English birth, in the dayes of Finan and Colman the Bishops, who leaving their native soile, had repaired thither, either for divine literature, or for more continencie of life, whereof some immediately gave themselves to monasticall conversation, others frequenting the Cels, gave diligent eare to the lectures of the readers. All which the Scots* (he meaneth the Irish men) *with most willing minde daily relieved, and that freely, yeelding unto them bookes to reade, and masterly care without hire. Among these, there were two young men of great towardnesse, of the Nobles of England, Edelthun and Egbert: the first was brother to Edilhun, a*

man beloved of God, who formerly had visited Ireland for learnings sake, and being well instructed, returned into his country, was made Bishop of Lindisfarne, and for a long time governed the Church with great discretion. These men being of the monasterie of Rathmelsig, and all their fellowes, by the mortalitie, either cut off or dispersed abroad, were both visited with the sicknesse; and to make short, that which mine Author layeth downe at large, *Edelthun* died thereof, and *Egbert* lived untill he was fourescore and tenne yeeres old. So farre *Beda.*

There was another *Colmannus*, otherwise called *Colmanellus*, an Abbot, of the sept of the *Neilles*, borne in Hoichle in Meth, what time the King of Leinster, with an huge armie wasted the North, he became first Abbot of Conor in Vlster, where the godly Bishop *Mac Cnessey* resteth. From thence he came to the place where he was born, and there (saith his Legend) he met with *Eadus* the sonne of *Aimireach*, a King of Ireland, *Edus Flan* a Lord of that country, of the sept of the *Neills*, his kinsman, Saint *Columba Cylle*, and Saint *Cannicus* the Abbot who received him ioyfully. *Edus Flan* gave him a parcell of land to build upon, and to inhabit, called *Fyd Elo*, afterwards called *Colmans Elo*, where hee founded a Monasterie, and now resteth himselfe.

Carantocus, in the martyrologe *Cartak*, was the

sonne of *Keredicus*, a King of Ireland, a good Preacher, the Irish call him *Ceruagh*, his mother was a Britaine, and was delivered of him in Wales. Hee travailed over Ireland and Britaine; King *Arthur* is sáid to have honoured him greatly, and gave him a parcell of land, where he builded a Church. In his latter dayes he came to Ireland, and died in a towne called after his name, Chervac: So much *Capgrave*. There was another of that name, an Abbot in France, of whom *Ionas* maketh mention in the life of *Columbanus*, but not of Irish birth.

Now to intermit a while from speaking of these learned men; I finde that *Aurelius Conanus*, (who slue *Constantine* that succeeded King *Arthur*, and raigned in his stead thirty three yeeres) valiantly by force of Armes brought under his command, as *Gualterus Oxoniensis* writeth, Norwey, Denmarke, Ireland, Island, Gothland, the Orchades, and Ocean Ilands. I finde also that *Malgo*, the nephew of this *Conanus*, who (as it is in the English history) succeeded *Vortipore*, vanquished the Irish Pictes, or Scots, which the Britaines called y Gwydhil Pictiard, which had overrunne the Isle of Man, of them called Tyr Mon, and slue *Serigi* their King with his owne hand at Llany Gwydhil, that is, the Irish Church at Holy-head; so write Sir *Iohn Price* Knight, and *Humfry Lloyd* in the description of Cambria. *Florilegus* saith, that he subdued sixe Ilands of the Ocean adioyning unto him, which *Harding* thus reckoneth.

And conquered wholy the Isle of Orkenay,
Ireland, Denmarke, Iselond and eke Norway,
And Gotland also obeyed his royaltie,
He was so wise, full of fortunitie.

When *Careticus* was King of Britaine, who began his raigne, *Anno Dom.* 586. the Saxons intending to make a full conquest of the land, called to their aide, for a number of Pirates and sea rovers, that were mighty and strong, and scoured the Seas and the Ilands, whose Captaine was *Gurmundus*, one calleth him an African. *Fabian* writeth, that he had two names, and was called *Gurmundus*, and *Africanus;* howsoever, I finde, that hee was the King of Norweys sonne, and for his successe in England, referre the reader to that historie; and for his behaviour in Ireland, I will acquaint the courteous reader with what I finde, in which the Writers noe not agree. *Cambrensis* and *Polycronicon* followed bad presidents, and were deceived; *Stanihurst* stammereth, writing one thing in English, another thing in Latine; the best record I finde, is in *Thadie Dowlinge*, Chancellour of Leighlin, and *Iames Grace* of Kilkenny. They write that *Gurmund* was in Ireland, but no King or Conquerour, that with strong hand he entred Leinster like a raging Pyrate, prevailed for the time, and that the Princes of the land, not being able then to withstand his forces, yeelded unto the iniquitie of the time, and wincked at his rash enterprises. And whereas he gave forth his stile, *King of England*, they laughed at it, and he

perceiving the wilinesse and ingeniositie of the people, and having small stomacke to continue among them, (by reason of many mishaps which befell him) left the land, and went for France to seeke adventures, where he ended his dayes. Further they write, that he had a sonne called *Burchard, alias Burchared Mac Gurmond,* whom his father made Duke of Leinster, and Baron of Margee. He was commonly called, *O Gormagheyn;* Hee builded Gurmund-grange in Monte Margeo, with other memorable things for him and his posterity; hee is said to have beene the founder of the mother Church or priorie of old Leighlin, but I rather beleeve hee was a Benefactor or endower thereof in the time of Saint *Eubanus* the originall Patron; and that one *Lazerianus* a Bishop and Confessor, *Anno* 651. procured the perfection of the whole, as in the Leighlin records more at large doth appeare. Againe, it is recorded that Duke *Burchard* lyeth buried on the North side of the Chancell of that Cathedrall Church, over against the Treasurers stall, under a marble stone, as it was found for certaine, *Anno* 1589. by *Thadie Dowlinge,* Chancellour, and others, with this Epitaph.

Hic jacet humatus Dux fundator Leniæ (i. Leiglenie) *En Gormondi Burchardus vir gratis Ecclesiæ.*

Here lyeth interred Duke Burchard, *the sonne of* Gurmond, *founder of Leighlin, and a gratefull man to the Church.*

There are, saith mine Author, other remembrances of this in those parts, as Gurmunds-grove, and Gurmunds-foord, the which I over-passe. *Mons Margeus*, in Irish, Sliewe Marrig or Sliew Marighagha, (which is the mountaine reaching along by Leighlin to Butlers wood) wherin, as before I have touched; Gurmunds-grange standeth, was, as I haue learned, of old, granted to one called *de Sancto Leodegario*, by the name and honour of Baron *de Marrighagha*, but time and place have brought the name to degenerate and turne from English to Irish. Of late yeeres a Gentleman of the name, dwelling at Dunganstowne, neere Catherlagh, (affirming himselfe to be lineally descended from Baron *Sentleger*) made claime unto the same, but the successe I hearken not after, as impertinent to my purpose.

About the yeere 587. *Athelfrid* the Saxon King of Northumbers, so tyrannized over the Britaines, that they were faine to take Ireland for their refuge, and *Aidan*, King of Scots pittying their state, raised forces to defend them, but could not prevaile, so great was the miserie of the Britaines.

Anno Dom. 635. was *Cadwallin* crowned King of Britaine; *Caxton* and *Florilegus* write of cruell warres betweene *Edwin*, sonne unto *Athelfrid*, King of Northumbers, and *Cadwallin*; how that *Edwin* made him flee into Ireland, destroyed his land, cast downe

his Castles, burnt his Mannors, and divided his land among his friends, and lastly, how that in a good while after, *Cadwallin* came upon him with forces out of Ireland, slue *Edwin*, and recovered all his possessions.

In the dayes of this *Cadwallin*, *Kenevalcus*, (otherwise called *Cewalch)* King of West Saxons, builded the Church of Winchester, made it a Bishops See, and the first Bishop he placed there, was one *Agilbertus*, who came out of Ireland, who in a short time after, was deposed, say some; *Grafton* with other writers record not the cause, but *Beda* writeth that he was offended, for that *Kenelwalkus* divided the Province into two, that he left the See, went into France, became Bishop of Paris, and there ended his dayes; and how that *Kenelwalkus* sent for him againe and againe, but his flat answer was, for that he had dealt with him so unkindely, he would never returne.

I must here insert that which *Cambrensis* writeth of the antiquities of Brechinia or Breknoke in this sort; *there was of old of that country, which now is called Brecheinoc, a governour that was a man both mighty and Noble, whose name was* Brachanus, *of whom the country of Brecheinoc,* (Brecknokshire) *is so called, of whom one thing came unto me worthy the noting; the histories of Britaine doe testifie that he had foure and twenty daughters, that were all from their childhood brought up in the service of God, and*

happily ended their dayes in the holy purpose they tooke upon them. Doctor *Powell* the great Antiquarie of Britaine, in his learned annotations upon him, explaineth the same thus. *This Brachanus,* (saith he) *was the sonne of one Haulaph, King of Ireland, his mother was one Mercella, the daughter of Theoderike, the sonne of Tethphalt a petite King of Garthmarthrin, to wit, of the country which tooke the name of this Brachanus, and at this day is called Brechonia, or Brechinia, in British, Brechinoc, in English, Breknok. This Brachanus had to his daughter, one Tydvaell, the wife of Congenus, the sonne of Cadell a petit King of Powis, and the mother of Brochmael, surnamed Scithroc, who slue Athelfred,* alias *Ethelfred, King of Northumberland, at the river of Deva* (called of the Britaines, Doverdwy) and foyled his armie about the yeere of our Lord, 603. Here Breknoktowne, and Breknokshire have cause to glorie of Ireland, that gave them the name and honour which they hold to this day, and Ireland to glory of them that gave their Kings sonne *Marcella* their Lady, and all that country in her right.

Also I cannot omit another thing of that age, the which *Grafton* reporteth of the Clergie; and I finde in *Beda*[1] more reverently delivered, for that I have formerly spoken much of them, and shall have occasion to speake something hereafter, especially seeing *Bedaes* words are generall, to be understood as well of

[1] *Beda eccles. hist. lib. 3. cap. 26.*

the one land, as of the other, if not rather of Ireland, considering what hath beene delivered heretofore. *In those dayes* (saith Grafton) *the Monkes and Clergie set all their mindes to serve God, and not the world, and were wholly given to devotion, and not to filling of the panch, and pampering of the body, wherefore they were then had in great reverence and honour, so that they were then received with all worship. And as they went by the streetes and wayes, men that saw them, would runne to them, and desire their blessings, and well was him then that might give unto them possessions, and to build them houses and Churches. But as they increased in riches of worldly treasure, so they decreased in heauenly treasure; as in the dayes of* Aluredus *some deale began, and sithen that time, hath sprung not all to the pleasure of God. Then they applyed nothing that was worldly, but gave themselves to preaching and teaching of the word of our Saviour Iesus Christ, and followed in life, the doctrine that they preached, giving good example to all men. And beside that, they were utterly void of covetousnesse, and received no possessions gladly, but were enforced thereunto. So farre Grafton.*

Anno Dom. 685. was *Cadwallader* crowned King of Britaines, that Ireland was subiect unto him, *Harding* testifieth, his words are,

Cadwaladrus after him gan succeed,
Both young and faire in florishing iuvent;

That Cadwallader was called as I reade,
Who of Britaine had all the Soveraigntie,
Of English and Saxons in each country,
Of Pightes, Irish, and Scots his under regence,
As Soveraigne Lord, and most of excellence.

For other things that concerne him, I referre the reader to the historie of England. He had two nephewes (his daughters sonnes) named *Ivor* and *Heuyr*, who fled into Ireland saith *Powell*, and when they saw their time, came with forces against the Saxons, gave them three battailes, with many skirmishes and inrodes, yet in the end, were foiled, as in the proper historie more at large appeareth. And here ended the rule of the Britaines which had long continued.

I must now acquaint the reader with such as for learning and sanctitie were of note during this age, beginning at the yeere 600. *Zacharias Lippeloo*, out of *Petrus Cameracensis*, writeth, that about this yeere 600. there was an heathenish and idolatrous King in Ireland, who had one *Dympna* to his daughter, who secretly was baptized by one *Gerebernus* a Priest that travailed the land for such purposes. The daughter being sole heire, and her mother being now dead, the father was very carefull to see her well matched according to his degree, and accordingly acquainted his dearest friends and counsellers with his intent and purpose, who likewise travailed carefully in the cause, but could not speed to the fathers contentment. As shee grew

in yeeres, so she excelled in beautie, and the father being as wicked as she was good and faire, became enamoured of his owne daughter, and importunately offered her marriage. Shee at first being amazed at the motion, yet at length gathering spirit, desired respite for forty dayes, and withall desired that it would please him to adorne her with such attire, jewels and ornaments, as became a Kings daughter to weare, all which being granted, she privately sent for *Gerebernus* the Priest, and acquainted him with all the circumstances. The Priest advised her, that the safest way for her to avoid the incestuous King, was to avoid the land; shee immediately with the Priest, together with her fathers Iester and his wife, tooke shipping, and arrived at Antverp. When they had rested there a while, and recreated themselves, they of devotion, (saith mine Author) sought out among woods and desarts, a solitarie place to remaine; in this resolution they came to a poore village called Ghele, (Gela saith *Molanus*) and from thence they went to a thicket called Zammale, where they rid some small quantity of ground, made a Caban to hold them all foure, where they continued well some three moneths, praying and fasting. In the meane while the Irish King missing his daughter *Dympna*, lamented greatly, made great inquirie, and offered great rewards to know what became of her, and having gotten inkling of her course, hoised up saile after her, and landed at Antverp, immediately hee made search, and sent messengers with large offers about, if haply they might heare of her. At the

length, by the coyne which they offered for reward; she was found out, for they said, there was a faire young woman, remaining in a solitary place, which had sent for reliefe for her selfe, and three persons more with the like coyne. The messengers were brought to the place, who knowing her ranne forthwith with newes to the King, and he with much ioy made haste to the Caban, and when he saw her, said; *O my onely daughter Dympna, my love, my delight, and the ioy of my heart; what constrained thee to despise a regall dignity, to forsake thy native soile, to forget the naturall affection of a Childe toward her Parent, to flee from thy father a King, and to follow, as a childe, this old decrepit bald Priest, and so willingly to condescend to his unsavorie injunctions? hearken to mine advice, returne with me into Ireland, yeeld to thy fathers desire, and I will advance thee above all the Ladies in Ireland.* *Gerebernus* the Priest, preventing the young Gentlewoman, turned him to the Irish King, and rebuked him sharpely, denouncing him for a most wicked and abhominable person; then he turned him to the Gentlewoman, and charged her never to give eare to so lewd a man. With this the King and his company being mightily moved, commanded the Priest to be taken aside, and his head to be taken off his shoulders. Afterward the father turned him to his daughter, *O daughter, (saith he) why sufferest thou mee thy father to bee thus vexed? why contemnest thou my love towards thee? yeeld, and thou shalt want nothing.* Shee with a sterne countenance made answer, *Thou infortu-*

nate tyrant, why goest thou about with deceitfull promises, to withdraw me from my settled puspose of shamefastnesse? I defie thee, and all thine. Thou cruell tyrant, why hast thou slaine the Lords Priest? shalt thou escape (thinkest thou) the iudgement of the Almighty? what torture thou wilt lay upon me, I weigh not: with this, the father being furiously moved, commanded his souldiers to cut off her head, and they being loath to doe it, he tooke the sword that hung by his side, and with his own hands strucke of her head, and with expedition returned into Ireland. Thus the Priest and *Dympna* died, of the Iester and his wife I reade nothing, belike they returned home againe. *Molanus* writeth, that many yeeres after, the bodies of *Dympna* and *Gerebernus* were sought out, taken up, and solemnly enterred. The Irish in the County of Louth doe honour her; belike her father dwelt there.

Saint *Bertwin*, an Irish man, was brought up in the Monasterie of Othbell in England, from thence he went to Rome, where hee led a solitarie life the space of two yeeres; in his returne, he came to the Forrest of Marlignia in Flanders, where he builded a Chappell; lastly, he was made Bishop of Molania, where he ended his dayes. *Sigebert ad an.* 651. writeth, *Many out of Eng. or Scot.* (he knew not well the countries) *as strangers travailing in France, preached the word of God, and did much good, to wit, Etto, Bertwinus, Eloquius.* This *Bertwin* lyeth buried nigh Namurcum (saith *Molanus*) of old called Namur,

novus murus, but now Namurra, so writeth *Hubertus Thomas Leodius*.

Livinus, borne in Ireland, and brought up in Scotland and England, under *Benignus* the Priest, and *Augustine* the first Bishop of the Saxons, by whom he was made Archbishop (saith *Molanus* [m]) of the Scots, (saith *Christianus Massæus*, of Ireland, saith *Bale*, *Silvestris Scotiæ*, of the Ilanders and Red shanckes) the which charge, after certaine yeeres, he committed to *Sylvanus* his Arch-deacon, and gave himselfe to travaile, and tooke with him his three disciples, Saint *Foillanus*, *Helias*, and *Kilian*, and came to Gandavum. Of him, *Christianus Massæus* writeth thus: In the yeere of our Lord, 631. Saint *Livinus* by nation a Scot, Archbishop of Ireland, came to Gandavum, with three disciples, and remained there one moneth, from thence he went to Esca, preached Christ, and converted many, there some hard-hearted people slue him, when he was beheaded, hee rose up, tooke with him his owne head, (beleeve it who list) and carried it to Houtthein, where the Angels had made a sepulchre for him. He is said (saith *Bale*) to have written a booke of Homilies, and in the yeere 1007. to have beene translated to Saint *Bavons* Church in Gandavum. There was another *Livinus* a French man, a Fryer minorite, and slaine, as they say, about the yeere 1345. and of fame at this day in Flanders.

[m] *Molanus nat. Sanctori Belgij. Chron lib.* 13.

Arbogastus borne in Ireland, a godly Preacher, and a great Writer, was the second Bishop of Argentine, *Anno* 646. who also for his great wisedome, was taken by *Dagobert* King of France, to be of his Councell. He left behinde him for the good of the Church, a booke of Homilies. So much *Bale* out of Munster. *Molanus* writeth, that about the yeere 647. some of the familie of *Pipinus*, the first Duke of Brabant, father of Saint *Gertrude*, sent for many Preachers out of Ireland and Scotland into Brabant, and the bordering regions, to plant the Christian religion among them, *Fortanus* and *Vltanus* are there named. *Lippeloo* saith, that about the yeere 696. *Egbertus*, *Wicbertus* and *Willibrodus* were famous learned men in Ireland, continued there a long time, afterwards dispersed themselves into farre countries, and with happinesse ended their dayes.

Molanus hereof writeth farther thus. *In the imperiall towne called Werda, the birth of Saint Switberd, (whom Beda calleth Suidbertus) the Bishop and Confessor is solemnized: who in the time of Pipinus, (the first Duke of Brabant) together with Saint Willibrod, preached soules health unto the nations thereabouts. This man, among other diseases, was wont to cure the disease in the throate, called of the Physitians, the squinancie. He is termed the second of those Apostolike men which came out of England and Ireland to preach the Gospell unto the Frisians, Hollanders, and the nations about them.* Among whom, be-

ing as yet but a Priest, he converted many, chiefly the inhabitants of the great Village Duerstadt, the which now is the towne of Wiic. He converted also the Citie Hagenstein, which now is a village adioyning unto Viana. And when as by the industrie of him and *Willibrodus*, the number of the faithfull daily increased, at the intreatie of the brethren in Trajectum and Friseland, both of them consented he should be consecrated Bishop. Whereupon Saint *Switbert* (whom *Beda* saith to have beene modest of life, and meeke in heart) went into England, and was consecrated by Saint *Willfride* Bishop of Mercia (Kent, saith *Beda*, had then no Bishop) in the yeere 695. But Saint *Willibrode* went unto Duke *Pipinus*, and having gotten leave of him, departed to Rome, where the yeere following, Pope *Sergius* consecrated him. And although *Switbert*, by reason of some small time, had the start of *Willibrode*, yet *Willibrode* went before him in dignitie, for he was the first Archbishop of Trajectum, and especially by Pope *Sergius*, consecrated Archbishop of Frisia, and directed to that people. And (saith *Beda*) *Sergius* changed his name, and called him *Clement*, because (saith *Molanus*) he consecrated him on Saint *Clements* Even. And he also writeth, that he was Archbishop of the nations now called Frisii, Transiselani, Trajectenses, Hollandi and Zelandi, whereas *Switbert* is not called Bishop of Trajectum, but fellow Bishop with Saint *Willibrode*. Yet he is by special name called the Apostle of Teisterbandia, Westfalia, and of the Boructuarians: for

Marcellinus writeth, that hee converted the county of Teisterbandia, and together with it, in a manner, all Batua, and the greater part of the lower Friseland unto the faith. He also exceedingly increased the number of the beleevers in the Church, at Trajectum; he founded many Churches, and dedicated the temples of Idols unto the honour of God. In the historie of *Marcellinus*, certaine places by especiall words are named; as in Zandwic, in the Ile of Tila, which at this day cannot be found in Arkell and Hoernaer villages of the Lordship of Gorcomia, in Schoenreford, (now called Schoenrewoert) by Leerda, in Authensden, nigh Huesden in Wondrighen, now called Worckum) in Aelborch, Giesen and Riiswijcke between Worckum and Huesden, in Almkerk (which is the territorie of Altenae) in Maelsem, Erkum and Avesaede in the Lordship of Buria, with many other places. In these countries hee hallowed Churches, continually praying with great devotion for the people which hee had converted, and with wholesome admonitions drawing them to the heavenly dwellings. He converted the Westfalians and Boructuarians, which at this day are thought to bee the people Markenses. Further, the renowned Duke *Pipinus* gave him Werda upon the river of Rhene, for his good, and for the establishing of his principality: which place is elsewhere called the Iland of Saint *Switbert*, though now it be part of the continent or maine land. *Pipinus* gave him also great store of treasure, wherewith he builded there a Monasterie, and replenished the same with a great company

of the servants of Christ. In the end, this Saint *Switbert* died in the yeere 717. and lyeth buried in the Monasterie of Werda-Cæsaris which he had founded.

Beda writeth, that *Willibrode* lived in his time, and went on the thirtieth and sixt yeere of his consecration, Archbishop of Friseland. *Molanus* delivereth his end, that namely he ended his dayes at Westervoert, and was buried at Elste in Gelderland; but of *Egbert* and *Wigbert* the Martyr (before mentioned) he reporteth out of *Beda*[n] and *Marcellinus*, that *Wigbert* was one of the companions of *Egbert*, and for the space of many yeeres, had led an Anchors life in Ireland, that he sailed into Friseland, and for the space of two whole yeeres, preached unto that nation, and to their King *Radbodus*, and seeing that he could doe no good among them, returned againe to Ireland. And when as *Egbertus* the servant of God, had sent the second time unto the Friselanders and Saxons, famous men for life and learning, *Acca*, *Willibaldus*, *Winiboldus*, *Lebuinus*, *Werenfridus*, *Marcellinus*, *Adalbertus*, *Ewaldus senior* and *junior*, together with *Willibrode*, he sent the said *Wigbert*, who no sooner landed, but King *Radbod* caused him cruelly to be tormented to death in *Fosetes-landt*, an Iland in the confines of Friseland and Denmarke; for that the Christians of that place by his preaching of the Gospell, had destroyed there the Idoll groves of *Iupiter* and *Fosta*.

[n] *Beda lib. 5. cap. 10.*

There was a later *Wigbertus*, Patron of Hersweldia, remembred in the Martyrologe, whom I would have the reader take notice of, to avoid the confusion of times. And last of all, of *Willibrode* and *Wilfram*, there is a storie, how that *Raboldus* after long perswasion, seemed willing to be baptized, and having one foot in the water, demanded where be the nobilitie of Frizeland, my Father, Grand-father and kindred? Answer being made, that they were in hell, hee withdrew himselfe from baptisme, saying, I will goe after the greatest company, take your heaven to your selfe.

Molanus when hee had at large written the lives of the foresaid learned men that came out of Ireland, he maketh in his Chronicle a recapitulation of them, the which will helpe the memorie of the reader, therefore I thought good to lay it down. ‘ *Egbert* the second ‘ time assaied to convert Friseland and Saxonie, ga- ‘ thered together twelve Apostolicke men, *Willibrode*, ‘ *Switbert*, *Acca*, *Wigbert*, *Wiltbald*, *Winibold*, ‘ *Lebuinus*, *Ewaldus*, surnamed the blacke, (*in Irish*, ‘ *Duffe*) *Ewaldus* the white, *Werenfridus*, *Marcel-* ‘ *linus* and *Adalbertus*.’

1 ‘ Saint *Willibrod* and Saint *Switbert*, by common ‘ consent of the brethren, were elected and conse- ‘ crated Bishops. Saint *Willibrode* was made Arch- ‘ bishop of Friseland, he received by the donation of ‘ Duke *Pipinus*, the Citie of Traiectum, with all

'thereunto appertaining. He founded in the terri-
'torie of Saint *Thomas*, a Colledge of regular Canons.
'In the towne of Rhen he is said to have found the
'body of *Cunera*, one of the eleven thousand Virgins.
'He travailed in preaching without Friseland; he
'had in Latharingia, two women disciples, *Herlind*
'and *Relind*, Nunnes of Maeseike, which now is of
'Leodium or Leege in Flanders. He converted the
'Hulstenses, Axellanos, Hasuenses, Birfletanos. At
'Trevires, in the Church of Saint *Marie* and Mar-
'tyres, hee founded a Monasterie of Monkes Bene-
'dictines. At Epternacum among the Luxemburghs,
'he founded a famous Monasterie, wherein hee was
'buried, Anno 736.

2 'Saint *Switbert* was consecrated in England, and
'converted many in Traiectum, Holland, Gelderland,
'chiefely Wiic, Hagelsteyn, Alcmaria, Waterlandia,
'Gerconium, Bomelia, Tiela, Huesda, Bura, Batua
'with other places. Hee is called the Apostle of
'Teisterbandia, Westfalia, and of the Boructuarians.
'He builded a Monasterie in Werda Cæsaris, where
'he ended his dayes, Anno 710.

3 '*Acca* went into England to the consecration of
'Saint *Switbert*, and when *Switbert* returned, he be-
'came Bishop of Lindisfarne.

'*Wigbert* is said to be martyred in Fostilandia
'adjoyning upon Friseland by *Radbodus* King of

'Friseland, who also slue Saint *Egelmund* the 'Martyr.

5. 6 '*Wilibaldus* and *Winiboldus* being brethren, 'went to Aistadium in Germanie.

7 '*Lebuinus* converted the Transiselanians, and 'resteth among them in Daventria.

8. 9 'The two *Ewaldes* went to Nabia, preached 'Christ, and were martyred by the old Saxons.

10 '*Werenfridus* converted many to the faith at 'Arnhemium in Westervaert, and at Neomagum in 'Elst.

11 '*Marcellinus* preached 65. yeeres, chiefely in 'Trenta, Twenta, Oudenzeel and Daventria.

12 '*Adelbertus* was the first Archdeacon of Trai-'ectum, preached in Kenemaria, together with *En-'gelmund* an Englishman before spoken of, and ly-'eth buried at Velsen in Egmondan monasterie.'

He writeth farther of *Wiron* and *Plechelinus*, Bishops of Friseland, who came thither together with *Otgerus* a Deacon, out of these parts, and were entertained by *Pipinus*, Duke of Brabant.

Many things are written by *Beda*, *Capgrave*, *Su-*

rius, Baronius, Molanus, Lippeloo and others, of *Fursæus, Foilanus,* (whom *Beda* calleth *Fullanus)* and *Vltanus.* They were three brethren, and the base sonnes of a King of Leinster, they flourished about the yeere sixe hundred fiftie and odde. *Fursæus* is said to have had many visions and dreadfull conflicts with divels and infernall spirits. He preached unto the Irish, Scots, Britaines and Saxons; hee went into France, where he wrought many miracles, (saith *Molanus)* and because of the fame that went abroad of him, one *Ercanaldus* gave him at Latiniacum, a parcell of land to build a Monasterie, also hee gave him another piece of ground at Perona, sometime a towne in Flanders, but now of France, and parcell of *Gallia Comata,* where he builded another Monasterie, and drew unto him, (saith mine Author) *germanos fratres, Foilanus* and *Vltanus,* and there ended the way of all flesh. They of Cambray doe honour him as a Bishop, not that hee was a Bishop, but an Apostle of certaine places. The martyrologe of Sarum reporteth, how that after his death, the angels and the deuils strove for his soule, how that the soule returned to the body againe, and how that he lived afterwards. Here the Author is deceived, for it was a trance that he was in, out of which after certaine conflicts, he came to himselfe againe, and finally in godly sort ended his dayes. I finde in the life of *Mocoeinoge,* that there was one *Fursæus* a Bishop, but more ancient then this.

With *Fursæus* there were at one and the selfe same

time, many famous men of Irish birth, renowned for learning and sanctitie, which gave themselves to travaile, and dispersed themselves to farre countries, as *Foilanus* and *Vltanus* (before mentioned) also *Mombolus*, *Boetius*, *Eloquius*, *Adulgisius*, *Columbanus*, *Hetto*, *Helanus*, *Tresanus*, *Germanus*, *Veranus*, *Gobanus*, *Corbrican*, *Dicull*, *Fredegandus*, *Colmanellus*, *Madelgarius*, *Algisius* and others. After they had visited Rome, they came backe (saith *Molanus*) into France and Flanders, *Fursæus* and *Adelgisius* into Perona, *Foilanus* and *Vltanus* into Fossa, *Eloquius* and *Algisius* into Theoras, the reverend Priest *Hetto*, unto the lake adioyning unto Corbriolum, where he builded a Monasterie called *domus Petri*. Further, saith *Molanus*, in the confines of the Attrebates, there is a Village called Buym, which hath a Church called Saint *Hetto*, whereupon is written, *In hoc loco Hetto Hiberniensium Episcopus mansionem habuit*, in another place of the Church, *Hic reposuit Hetto Hibernensis Episcopus reliquias de corpore sancti Clementis Papæ & Martyris*. In another place he writeth of *Hetto*, *Goban*, and *Corbrican*, that they were three brethren, and in their returne from Rome, died at Walciodorum, and lie buried at Fesca. *Beda* left but a bare mention of *Goban* and *Dicull*, onely this, that they were companions of *Foilanus*.

Foilanus was slaine in a place in Flanders, called Carboriar. Saint *Bernard* writeth, that in the place where he was slaine, there is a Monasterie builded by

the name of Saint *Foilane ordinis præmonstratensis*, in the Diocesse of Cambray.

Fredegand preached in Antverp, where now hee resteth, and is greatly honoured.

Mombolus became an Abbot in the Monasterie of Fursæus in France, a perceiving a conspiracie of his covent against him, forsook the place, and withdrew himselfe, together with a few of his company, unto a place of old called Condrynus, upon the river Isara, where he led an hermites life, and ended his dayes. There was another of that name, a Saint of Burdeux, but not of Irish birth.

Eloquius preached most painefully throughout France and Saxonie, and being seated at Latiniecum in the Monasterie which *Fursæus* had founded, perceived some treacherie practised against him, withdrew himselfe (as formerly *Mombolus* had done) to a solitarie place called Grimacum, upon the rivers of Some and Isara, where he departed this life, afterwards his body was translated to Walciodorum in Flanders, and there he resteth.

About this time, Saint *Authert*, borne in Ireland, was Bishop of Cambray; he converted *Hannonia*, and is called the Apostle of Flanders; of him *Molanus* writeth thus, ‘ *Authertus* had beene for certaine ‘ yeeres, Hiberniæ gubernator, governour of Ireland, ‘ *(the which I take to be some ecclesiasticall charge)*

'by which occasion, many singular good Preachers 'heretofore mentioned, came the more willingly out 'of Ireland unto us.'

Trithemius reporteth of this time in this sort, 'There were many Monasteries of Irish men in Ger- 'manie, Herbipolis and other places, but when their 'zeale waxed cold, and that they fell to remisse and 'dissolute life, they were expulsed, and their habita- 'tion became waste and desolate.'

Saint *Chilian* (otherwise written *Kilian)* whom *Bale* calleth a Scot, *Surius, Baronius,* and *Lippeloo,* write that hee was an Irish man of Noble Parentage. *Molanus* writeth, 'in Hibernia regio sanguine pro- 'creatus, that he was begotten in Ireland of royall 'bloud;' another saith he was a Kings base sonne. This man became a Monke, went to Rome, together with *Colman* a Priest, and *Totnan* a Deacon of the same country birth, in the time of *Conon,* Bishop of Rome, about the yeere 687. to sue unto the Bishop there, that Ireland might be released of the curse that was denounced against the land, and the inhabitants thereof, for the Pelagian heresie. *Molanus* writeth, that he served in Saint *Peters* Church in Rome, eleven yeeres, but he was directed another course, for he was consecrated Bishop of Herbipolis in the East parts of France, and together with his fellowes sent away. There they converted *Gosbert* a French Duke, which had married one *Geila* his brothers wife. It is

Iohn Baptists case, he rebuked him for it, and shee hearing thereof, sent certaine lewd persons in the night, which murthered them all three, and privily buried them, lest so horrible a fact should come to light; but God that will have no such villany concealed, brought it out, the tormentors became madde, and confessed the whole. *Beda* in his Martyrologe reporteth, how that at Wirciburge in Austria, the birth day of *Kilian* the Martyr, and his two companions, is solemnly kept the eight of Iuly.

Molanus saith, that in his travaile he met with Saint *Fiacre*, sometime his fathers servant, but he following carefully his direction, staid not with him, but passed on in his iourney. This Saint *Fiacre*, (saith the Martyrologe) was base sonne of some King in Ireland, went into France, and became an heremite; there are small remembrances of him in *Surius* and *Lippeloo*, saving that for a womans sake which called him a Witch, Sorcerer, and Inchanter; hee commanded that no woman should put foot into his Cloister, and if any should doe so, he prayed that God would lay some plague upon her; to try this, a woman sent her maide to take the ayre of the Cloyster, but she tooke no harme; upon a second tryall, a fairer then she presumed so farre, that her shinne, her knee, and her thigh, (saith mine Author) and some parts above, tooke swelling, and that went for a punishment. In an antient manuscript Legend of the life of *Congellus* or *Congallus*, I finde that Saint *Fiacre*

returned into Ireland, and became Abbot of Airard in Leinster upon the river of Berba, now called the Barrow, in the Barony of Odrone, and that he went to the Abbey of Beanchor in Vlster to visite *Congellus*, at whose hands *Congellus* received the Sacrament, and gave up the Ghost. There also it is further alledged, that this *Fiacre* builded a Monasterie in Leinster, in the honour of Saint *Congellus*.

The martyrologe aforesaid, remembreth Saint *Cataldus* a Bishop, Saint *Finan* an Abbot, Saint *Sacodine* a Virgin, who forsooke her husband, and entred religion, to have lived then: and how that *Indrake*, a King of Ireland, forsooke his royaltie, went to Rome with his sister *Dominica*, led a private life, and died beggers. *Capgrave* calleth him *Indraktus*, saying that he was a Kings sonne, and tooke with him, beside his sister, nine persons more.

About this time, (saith *Capgrave*) one *Muriardachus*, Monarch of Ireland, together with his wife *Sabina*, lived in the true faith and feare of God, who being mighty and wise, commanded in good sort all the Princes of the land. In this his good successe and peaceable government, he was envied, so that a petite King his neighbour, came upon him in the night, murthered him with his Queene, and all his familie, excepting one daughter, whose life hee saved for her beauties sake. This cruell tyrant after assaulted this faire Gentlewoman to his filthy lust, and when with

faire perswasions he could not prevaile, at length by force he oppressed her, so that shee conceived and bare him a sonne, called at the time of his baptisme, *Milluhoc*, but afterwards, *Cuthbert*.

This *Cuthbert* being borne (as my Author writeth) at Kilmacrodrike, some three miles from Dublin, his mother tooke him to Scotland to her two brethren, *Meldan* and *Eatan*, that were Bishops. From thence hee went into the North parts of England, and was brought up among the holy Monkes of those dayes, in the Monasterie of Mailros, under the Abbot *Boisilius*, whom he succeeded in the same Monasterie. *Anno* 651. And *Anno* 676. he went to the Ile Farne, which was uninhabited, and continued there nine yeeres, building, teaching and preaching, and (as *Beda* writing his life delivereth) working in harvest time with his owne hands. The fame of his vertues and holinesse went farre abroad, so that *Egfride*, King of the Northumbers, made him Bishop of Lindesfarne, to which dignitie hee was consecrated at Yorke by *Theodorus* the Archbishop, *Anno* 685.

In his time, the aforesaid *Egfride* sent *Brith* with a great host into Ireland to be revenged of them, for that he was given to understand, they had aided his enemies against him; these Saxons over-ranne the land, killing, burning and spoyling, they spared neither Church nor Monasterie, so writeth *Beda*.* *Ber-*

* *Beda eccles. hist. lib. 4. cap 26.*

thus vastavit miserè gente innoxa, & nationi Anglorum semper amicissimam: Berthus pittifully spoiled this harmlesse people, who alwaies most kindely affected the English nation. *Cuthbert* reproved him for it, and the Ilanders cried unto the heavens, and prayed God to avenge their cause. *Beda* reporteth farther, how that he bent his forces afterwards against the Pictes and Scots, and would not be advised by *Cuthbert* and *Egbert*, and that his bloudy course had no good successe, and that then *Egfride*, the glory of the Saxons began to decay, the which *Florilegius* attributeth to the crie of the Irish, and the courage of the Pictes and Scots, and Britaines. In his time, saith *Caradoc*, it rained bloud in Britaine and Ireland; the Milke likewise and the Butter, turned to the colour of bloud, and the Moone appeared all bloudie.

Cuthbert, when he had beene Bishop two yeeres, forsooke his Bishopricke, and went to the Ile Farne, where hee led an hermites life, and left the world, *Anno Dom.* 687. It is written of him that he forbade his Monkes and Priests, the company of women, and that they should not come within any Cloyster, for that the devill appeared unto him in his Church in the shape of a woman most faire and beautifull. Yet I finde that he conversed much with *Ebba* and *Verca*, and with *Elfleda*, King *Egfrides* sister, and repaired oft to their Nunneries, did eate and drinke with them, and sent *Elfleda* a linnen or threed Girdle for a token,

which tooke away a swelling and crampe that troubled her, and that he was shrouded in the winding sheete, which the Nunne *Verca* had sent him. *Anno* 875. *Ardulphus*, Bishop of Lindisfarne, fearing the incursion of the Danes, who destroyed Churches, and defaced Tombes, tooke the corps of *Cuthbert*, and attempted the transporting of it into Ireland, but the winde was against them, and compelled them to land in England, then they brought it to Cuncaster, some sixe miles from Durham, where it rested some yeeres. *Anno* 925. (though *Stow* referre it to the yeere 995.) *Aldunus* (who was the first Bishop of Durham) preventing (as formerly *Ardulphus* did) the invasion of barbarous people, removed it to a place full of bushes and thornes, now called Durham, and with the aide of Earle *Vthred*, builded a Church over it, where (now at length) it resteth. *Edmund* the second Bishop of Durham, enlarged the Church, and beautified the place of his buriall, and long after, were brought thither, the bodies of *Balther and Bilfride*, that had beene Anchors, *Acca* and *Alkmundus* that had beene Bishops, *Ebba* the Nunne, and familiar of *Cuthbert*, *Boisilus* the Abbot his master, King *Oswine*, and the bones of *Beda* that rested at Girwin, so writeth *Capgrave*. He that will see farther of *Cuthbert* and his patrimonie, (so called in the Bishopricke of Durham) of the endowments and grants given by Christian Princes, and of the reverend opinion held of the place, because of the sanctitie of Irish *Cuthbert*,

let him repaire to learned *Camdens* Brigantes, the which for that they concerne the antiquities of England more then Ireland, I omit.

Now to come to the 700. yeere of Christ. I will beginne with *Adamannus*, who flourished *Anno* 701. as *Florilegus* writeth, in the time of *Alfred*, King of Northumbers, whom *Beda* highly commendeth, and as it may be gathered and borrowed out of his workes, many things to furnish his historie of England. I finde of divers reported, that he was in Ireland, and did much good. I take it he was of Irish birth, for I cannot finde the contrary. *Bale* summarily out of *Beda* and others, writeth in his life as followeth. ‘ *Adamannus Colodius*, by profession a Monke, not ‘ vowed, but of the Apostolike order, and governour ‘ of that famous Monasterie, which of old, *Columba-* ‘ *nus* the disciple of *Congellus* had founded in the Ile ‘ Hu, made himselfe a patterne of vertue to be followed ‘ of many; hee was a man studious and singularly well ‘ seene in holy Scripture, as *Tritemius* witnesseth, nei- ‘ ther ignorant of prophane literature, wise and faire ‘ spoken; hee was for his life and conversation, re- ‘ nowned, and for opinion of sanctitie, recounted the ‘ father of many Monkes, so that hee travailed in a ‘ manner all the North regions of Britaine; he was a ‘ notable Preacher, instructing with heavenly admoni- ‘ tions, Irish, Scots, Pictes, and Anglosaxons. Hee ‘ willingly gave eare to all such as made report of any ‘ memorable acts of Palestina by their travaile, and of

'other places of the holy Land, with the site thereof, 'trusting thereby to attaine unto a better sight in the 'holy Scripture. Then it fell out (say the Chrono- 'graphers) that one *Arnulphus*, a Bishop of France, 'comming from Ierusalem, and being winde-driven to 'that place, arrived there, and throughly enformed '*Adamannus*, the which he shortly after committed to 'writing, and dedicated unto *Alfred*, King of Nor- 'thumbers, with these titles.'

De locis terræ sanctæ ..... *lib.* 1.
De situ Ierusalem ..... *lib.* 1.
De paschate legitimo ..... *lib.* 1.

With certaine Epistles. So farre *Bale*. I have seene beside these, a Manuscript worke of his, of the life of Saint *Columba* in three bookes.

About the yeere 740. saith *Lippeloo*, *Gualafer* Bishop of Dublin, was famous, who by his prayers obtained that *Cecilia*, wife to *David* King of Scots, and daughter to the King of Sicilia, being barren, did conceive & beare a sonne called *Rumoldus*, [p] who after the decease of *Gualafer*, was made Bishop of that See, and consecrated by the Archbishop of Canterbury, and two other Prelates. He went into England, afterwards to France, and came to Rome, *Anno* 752. in the time of *Stephen* 2. he resigned his Bishopricke, from thence hee went into Brabant, and by his prayers (saith mine Author) got one *Eliza*, wife to Earle *Ado*, of the age of 66. yeeres, to conceive. In the

[p] Saint *Rumold. Zachar. Lip. de vitis Sanct. tom.* 3.

end he went to repaire an old Church, agreed with workemen, wrangled with them so, that they for one quarrell and other, and especially for that they held him to be rich, hoping to get some part of his wealth, knockt him in the head with a hatchet, and there lay Saint *Rumolde*. *Molanus* [q] in discreet sort examineth this historie, and delivereth that this *Rumoldus* tooke with him beyond the seas, one Saint *Himelin*, now Patron of Fenacum, the place in Dutch is *Sijnte Himelijns Vissenaken*, some said he was of his bloud, others some, that he was of his bloud and bone. His words are these. 'Some suppose that Saint *Rumold* 'was the sonne of *Erfinus* King of Scots, after whom 'succeeded in the kingdome, the third and fourth 'sonne, *Fergusius* and *Achaius*, but the names of the 'first and second sonne are not extant. They adde 'happely unto the rest, that because he was the King 'of Scots his sonne, it stood him upon to forsake the 'Bishopricke of Dublin, when *Solvathius* that raigned 'betweene *Fergusius* and *Achaius*, warred against the 'Irish, and upon this occasion, he tooke his iourney to 'Rome, and at his returne, preached the Gospell at '*Mechlin*. All which, by conferring the times, would 'have some great probabilitie, unlesse the antient 'Monuments and Records of *Mechlin*, had avouched 'him to have beene the sonne of one *David* a King, 'and to have beene brought forth into the world, by 'the intercession and devout prayers of *Gualafer*, 'Bishop of Dublin, and of him baptized, whereby I

[q] *Io. Molanus nat. Scotorum Belgij ex Martyrologo Mechlin.*

'gather, that he was the sonne of some King of Ire-
'land. Neither is it any mervaile, though we reade
'not of this *David*, when as Saint *Bernard* witnes-
'seth, that Ireland was not governed by one King,
'but by many; the orderly succession of which Kings,
'I suppose for the most part is now perished. If you
'urge that hee came of the Scottish bloud royall; I
'admit it, for it is so sung every where throughout the
'Diocesse of *Mechlin*, but that of old the Irish men
'were understood and comprehended under the name
'of Scots, by the life of Saint *Patricke* and elsewhere,
'is very manifest. To this purpose is that which *Beda*
'affirmeth, that Ireland is properly the country of the
'Scots, and *Ionas* also writeth in the entrance to *Co-*
'*lumbanus* his life, how that the Scottish nation inhabit
'the Iland of the Irish. This *Rumoldus* died, *Anno*
'775. and is honoured in *Mechlin* for their Patron.'

Virgilius Solivagus, borne in Ireland, and descended of noble Parentage, in his yeeres of discretion, forsooke his native soile, and together with certaine companions of the same countrey birth, went into Germanie, where *Anno* 754. hee was made Abbot of Salisburge, by *Odilo*, Duke of Bavaria, and shortly after, Bishop of Iuvaviens; the name of which Bishopricke, hee procured to be changed, and called it the Bishops see of Salisburgh, where he builded a sumptuous Cathedrall Church, and was the first founder thereof. In his time, one *Boniface* an English man, and the Popes Legate in Germany, tooke upon him to

rebaptize, contrary to the Canons of the Church, such as had beene (as hee thought) formerly not rightly baptized. *Virgilius* (having had conference with *Sydonius*, Archbishop of Bavaria) opposed himselfe against him. The matter came to hearing before Pope *Zacharie*, who gave sentence, that *Virgilius* was in the right, and *Boniface* his Legate (for all his great authority) in the wrong opinion. Hee prudently governed his Church some thirty yeeres, and gave place to nature. So farre *Bale*, out of *Gaspar Bruschius*.

Learned *Camden* alledgeth out of *Rhegino*, that in the time of *Carolus magnus*, which must needs bee about the yeere 767. certaine Norwegians or Normans entred Ireland, and were repulsed, and further of them I have not read: but in the British Chronicle of *Caradoc Llancarvan*, I finde that Anno 799. the Danes came into England, and destroyed a great part of Lindsey and Northumberland, overranne the most part of Ireland, and destroyed Rechreyn.

The accidents of the eight hundreth yeere after Christ, now follow. And first of all, *Functius* offereth occasion to write, how that Anno 820. *Regnerus*, King of Denmarke, invaded Britaine, and how that his prosperous successes in Britaine, Scotland, and the Orchades, puffed him up, and emboldned him so much, that he passed into Ireland, slue the King of the land, tooke the Citie of Dublin, where hee re-

mained an whole yeere, and then returned to Denmarke.

Next commeth *Turgesius* his time to bee examined, who was of Norwey, and came with great power of Esterlings into Ireland, vanquished King *Edlumding*, or *Edlimidus*, or in Irish, *Felim Mac Edmund*, and raigned thirty yeeres. Here (gentle reader) observe certain errours or escapes (whether of ignorance, wilfulnesse, or negligence, I know not) the which I finde betweene *Cambrensis*, *Polychronicon*, *Fabian* and others, touching *Gurmund* and *Turgesius*. First, that *Gurmund* and *Turgesius* should be one man, the end of them both by a generall consent of Writers, reproveth that; for *Gurmund* dyed in France, and *Turgesius* was slaine in Ireland. Secondly, (whereat *Giraldus* marvaileth) how that the Antiquaries of England make mention of *Gurmund*, but nothing of *Turgesius*, and that the Writers of Ireland speake of *Turgesius*, but little or nothing of *Gurmund;* so that *Turgesius* by reason of his raigne and continuance was knowne unto them, and *Gurmund*, if he were here, made small abode, (as I have formerly written) and therefore became a man unknowne. Thirdly, that *Turgesius* should be *Gurmunds* deputie in Ireland, or his brother (as I reade in *Fabian)* cannot possibly stand with the truth: for on all sides it is agreed, that *Gurmund* came to Britaine, and ioyned with the Saxons against *Careticus*, who began his raigne in

Britaine, *anno* 586. but, as saith *Cambrensis*, *Turgesius* Captaine of the Norwegians, Danes or Esterlings, came to Ireland in the daies of *Fedlimidius*, which was 400. yeeres from the comming of the first *Patricke* into the land, in the which time there had raigned thirty three Kings or Monarchs; then this knot with facilitie may be untied, for *Patricke* came to Ireland (as I have formerly delivered) *An* 432. adde 400. to it, then *Turgesius* came to Ireland, *Anno* 832. But forward with the history.

When these Norwegians or Esterlings had got footing in the land to their content, and planted themselves the space of thirty yeeres, they builded Castles, Fortes and Wardes, they cast up Trenches, Bankes and Ditches for safegard and refuge. Toward the end of the terme before mentioned, *Turgesius* was enamoured on a faire Gentlewoman, the onely daughter of *Omalaghlin*, King of Meth, and desired her for his Concubine; he practised with the father for obtaining of his purpose, the father not willing to yeeld, nor daring to displease, resolved him thus: Appoint the day, the houre, and the place, and sequester your selfe from your Court and retinue, and I will send my daughter unto you with twelve or sixteene Gentlewomen, of the choice and beautifullest maidens of my country, and take your choice of them; if my daughter please you best, she is at your command.

When the time appointed came, and the Lecher longed to satisfie his filthy lust, *Omalaghlin* attired his daughter in princely sort, and sent her to King *Turgesius*, with sixteene young men in womens attire, which had long Skeines under their Mantles. These young springals were faire, beautifull, effeminate, and amiable to look upon; they were brought to his chamber, and presented before him, he taketh the Gentlewoman by the middle, and kisseth her, the Striplings out with their Skeines, and stabbed him, having the Lady in his armes, whereof he presently dyed, whilst they fell upon a few loose and dissolute persons that were about him, whom they killed every one.

Omalaghlin that lay in ambush all this while with certaine horsemen, (expecting the end of this exploit) reioyced greatly when hee saw his daughter and her company make so speedy a returne, and understanding that his practise was effected as he desired, sent Scoutes and Cursitors, Messengers and horses over the whole land, declaring what had happened. Immediately, Meth and all Leinster are in Armes, the Princes and Lords from euery place throughout Ireland, repaired to *Omalaghlin*, and being glad of liberty, reioyced with him at the destruction of *Turgesius* and his Guard. To make the story short, (for they made short worke with it) they set upon the Norwegians and Danes, killed them every mothers

sonne that escaped not by flight, seized upon all their possessions, so as together with their lives, they lost all their lands and goods: and, saith the Irish Chronicle, *tunc cepit conquestus Hibernicorum*, 'Then 'the Irish began to conquer.'

This *Omalaghlin* King of Meath, being in great trust, credite and favour with *Turgesius* (no man greater at that time) demanded of him (concealing the plot that lay hidden in his heart against the Norwegians) by what meanes certaine ravenous and pestiferous fowle (hee meant the Norwegians) lately brought into the land, which greatly annoyed the country, might be destroyed? *Turgesius* answered, if they breed, destroy their egges, birds, and nests; which answer, the Irish made good upon the Norwegians.

Not long after (saith *Cambrensis* and *Polychronicon)* after what? They meane, after the murthering of *Turgesius*, and rooting out of all the Norwegians and Esterlings, 'There came againe out of 'Norway, and the Northerne Ilands, as remnants of 'the former nation, and whether they knew of them-'selves, or by relation of their Parents and Ances-'tours, the land to be fruitfull, & commodious; thi-'ther they came, not in warlike sort, but in peaceable 'manner, to use the trade of merchandise; when they 'had entred certaine Ports and Havens of Ireland, 'with the licence of the Princes of the land, they 'builded therein divers Cities. For the Irish nation,

'(*they speake of that time*) naturally given to idle-
'nesse, would not sulcate the seas, neither give them-
'selves to merchandise, so that by one consent of the
'whole land, it was thought good, that some certaine
'nation, by whose industrie the commodities of other
'regions wanting in Ireland, might be hither trans-
'ported, should be suffered to dwell in some parts of
'the land. Their Leaders and Captaines were three
'brethren, *Amelanus*, *Sitaracus* and *Ivorus*, when
'they had first builded three Cities, Dublin, Water-
'ford, and Limericke; the command of Dublin fell
'to *Amelanus*, Waterford to *Sitaracus*, Lymericke to
'*Ivorus*, and from these by degrees, in processe of
'time, they gave themselves to build other Cities in
'Ireland. This nation (*quæ nunc Oastmannica gens*
'*vocatur*) which now is called the Esterling nation,
'or East men, at their first comming, demeaned them-
'selves toward the Kings of the land, in a most royall
'and peaceable mander, but when the number multi-
'plied of their owne kinne, and they had fortified
'their Cities with wals and trenches, they began to
'revive the old hatred that was hid in their hearts,
'and obstinately to rebell. They were called Oost-
'manni of their corrupt Saxon tongue, as men of the
'East. Of these and the former Norwegians, the
'Irish tooke the use of the Spar*th*es, *now called* Gal-
'loglas axes.' So farre *Cambrensis verbatim*, and
Polychron in substance.

Divers have diversly delivered their opinion, and

misreckoned themselves in their computation of yeeres, when these Cities before spoken of were builded. *Stanihurst* in his description of Ireland, referreth it to the yeere 155. and that they were builded by *Amelanus*; in another place he alledgeth it was after *Gurmundus* his dayes, done in like sort by *Amelanus*. It is such an errour as I cannot well impute it to the Printer. *Cambrensis* and *Polychronicon* doe not lay down the yeere, but the time about the yeere: what beside is added, is but fancie and conjecture, for their testimony is the ground of all. For where they write that these brethren came to Ireland after the death of *Turgesius*, then it was after the yeere 862. wherein hee died, but how soone or how long after, there is no certaintie. That they builded these Cities, I doe not beleeve, I had rather say with *Stanihurst*, that they reedified them, for those places were after a sort builded, and inhabited many yeeres before their arrivall. I take it that as Merchants, they builded themselves dwelling houses, walled the townes, and made keyes to moore their shippes, neither doe I hold it that every one severally builded a Citie, but all three together with the aide of their country Merchants upon their arrivall in their safe Ports, builded and planted their country people, and rested not long, for the Irish fell upon them, and banished them out of the land, for their riches, pride, and rebellion.

In the yeere 850. lived *Patricke* the Abbot of Ireland, Abbot and Confessor. For there were two

Patrickes, the first a very learned and godly man, the second a Abbot, and given to superstition, and founder of the fabulous Purgatorie, which goeth in Ireland under the name of Saint *Patrickes* Purgatorie; so write *Ranulphus*, Monke of Chester, and *Bale*, Bishop of Ossory, though *Stanihurst* allow not of it, but attribute it to the first *Patricke*, and that without warrant.

In his time there rose a great rebellion in Ireland, so that hee fled into Britaine, and lyeth buried in Glastenbury. The Martyrologe of Sarum reporteth, that in Ireland they keepe the feast of *Patricke* the Abbot, the 24. of August. *Stanihurst* to further his credite, delivereth that he wrote a booke of Homilies, and certaine Epistles directed to the Irish. The sounder opinion is, (the which *Stanihurst* at unawares remembred out of *Claudianus*) that the place there, was in like sort as it is now in the time of Paganisme, and was long before Saint *Patrickes* dayes, And it seemeth to be after the manner of concavities in the bowels of the earth, where the ayre entring naturally to avoid *Vacuum*, and the winde following, whisteleth and crieth like dolefull ghosts; the silly ignorant and simple people being deceived through perswasion of covetous Priests, that some soules and spirits doe penance there for their sinnes, call it a Purgatorie. And further we see by reason and daily experience in Miners, that if any be much under grownd, the dampnesse of the earth takes away their lively colour, and

makes them looke ghastly, and if they continue any long while there (the vitall spirits being barred of their usuall course) they are mightily tormented, cast into trances, and distracted, and being once delivered from the place, report things at randon of heaven and earth, beleeve them who list.

Albertus Krantz,[r] reckoning up reports given forth out of severall countries touching visions, apparitions, voyces, illusions, inserteth among them, *Patrickes* Purgatorie in Ireland, and concludeth, that they are to be accounted among old Wives fables. *Antoninus*[s] alledgeth *Vincentius* for his Author, how that in those dayes, the historie *de fassæ sancti Patricij of Saint Patrickes* pit or ditch, was not of many allowed, the reason is alledged, for that it is there avouched, that the soules in that Purgatorie, goe not straight to heaven, but into some terrestriall Paradice, whereas the received opinion is, (saith he) that there is no middle place betweene Purgatorie and the celestiall Paradice.

In the time of *Alphred, alias Alured*, King of West Saxons, *anno* 872. as *Fabian* and *Cooper* have noted, there was a grievous maladie raigning among the people, called the *euill ficus*, which also tooke the King, so that (say mine Aushors) an Irish maid came

[r] *Albertus Krantz Dan. lib.* 2.

[s] *Ant. chron. p.* 2. *tit.* 11. *cap.* 18.

out of Ireland, called *Modwen*, whose Monasterie in time of rebellion, was destroyed, and cured the King. In recompence whereof, she had land given her in the North, whereon two Monasteries were founded, and now she resteth at Aundersey by Burloa. *Polychronicon* and *Holinshead* report the historie, as if *Alphred* had gone into Ireland unto her. I alledge this historie to put the reader in minde, how that formerly I have written of one *Modwen*, who lived immediately after Saint *Patricke*, and was of Irish birth, about 400. yeeres agoe. Were it not for the time, by many circumstances, they both should be one, but to remove all doubts, and to uphold the credite of antiquaries, I will say they were two, of one country birth, and now rest in one place.

There was great amitie betweene *Alphred* or *Alured* before mentioned, and *Gregory*, King of Scots, in whose time, *Anno* 877. (*Grafton*, *Cooper*, and *Buchanan* are mine Authors) great troubles and misery fell upon Ireland; the circumstances in briefe were these. The Citizens of Dublin found themselves grieved, and mightily wronged by the Scots of Galloway; that whereas certaine tall ships of theirs were wind-driven thither, the Scots fell upon them, rifled them, and thereof made a prey. In revenge whereof, the people of Dublin gathered Irish forces, arrived there, and preyed the country. *Gregory* the King having intelligence thereof, hastened with his forces, to encounter with them; the Irish fearing the worse,

got them with ther pillage aboard their shippes, and hoised up sailes for Ireland: *Gregory* prepareth his navy, and shortly after arriveth in Ireland.

The King at that time (saith *Buchanan*) was but a childe, whose name was *Duncanus*, or *Donatus*, or rather *Dunachus;* the Protectors or chiefe commanders of the land about the King, were *Brian* and *Cornelius*, who had drawne the land into two factions. The Irish hering of the comming of *Gregory*, fortified themselves upon the river of the Band, but there the Scots overthrew them: *Brian* was slaine, and *Cornelius* put to flight. The Scots left them not so, but pursued them, preyed the country without resistance, constrained the townes before them to yeeld, and hearing by the way that *Cornelius* gathered all the forces of Ireland against them, made ready to ioyn battaile, in the which, *Cornelius* and all his forces were foiled, so that for a safeguard of his life, hee fled to Dublin, and his armie dispersed themselves abroad. *Gregory* followed him, laid siege to Dublin, and by reason there were so many received within that fled from the field, they could not long indure the strength of the puissant King of Scots without, wherefore by generall consent of the Citizens, *Cormacke*, Bishop of Dublin, opened the gates, received the King of Scots, without losse of any man of either side, or damage of goods. Immediately *Gregory* the King of Scots, went to his cousin *Duncan* the young King, saluted him, and delivered unto him that he came not for his kingdome, ne for

gold nor silver, ne for commodities of his country, but onely to be revenged of them that had formerly injured his subiects. And as for you, said he, cousin *Duncan*, I beare you no malice; without bloud I came into the Citie of Dublin, without bloud I will depart; recompence of the Citizens of Dublin I seeke none, the inhabitants betweene this and the Band have satisfied me and my people, let the Citizens pay it them againe, and make no more such rash attempts into Scotland. With this they lovingly departed, and continued friends, to the great honour of the King of Scots.

After this, *Anno* 897. poore Ireland had another scourge, for saith *Caradoc Llancarvan* in his British Chronicle, and likewise *Polichronicon*, this country was destroyed with strange wormes, having two teeth, so that there was neither corne nor grasse, nor food for man or beast, for all was consumed that was greene in the land, at the season of the yeere. The nine hundreth yeere followeth.

The Saxons that divided Britaine (as formerly hath been declared) into many kingdomes, began now to grow weake in their estate; and the Danes that troubled in a manner all Christendome, were falling to naught: yet *Anno* 905. saith the British Chronicle, the Danes entred Ireland, preyed, spoyled, and fired the country, slue in the field, *Carmot*, (so he calleth him) *alias Cormac*, Monarch of Ireland, and

the sonne of *Cokeman*, a man both godly and religious; and also *Kyrvalt*, sonne of *Morgan*, King of Leinster. Then they roved round about England, hulling upon the seas, and landing where they espied advantage, destroyed with fire and sword as much as lay in them.

Anno 911. they came againe into Ireland (saith *Cooper*) holding on in their former outrages.

Anno 913. (saith *Carodoc*) the men of Dublin with great forces came to Anglesey, preyed and destroyed the Iland, and returned to Ireland: the cause I finde not, but that sea and land was bent to mischiefe, the fire upon the land, and piracie upon the sea.

Anno 925. the second yeere of the raigne of *Adelstane*, the base sonne of *Edward* the first, (called *Edward Senior*) King of West-Saxons, was a great armie gathered by the said *Adelstane*, against *Hawlaffe*, King of Ireland, the sonne of *Suthricus*, and a Painym, saith *Polychronicon*, who came with the whole power of the Scots and Danes against him, and gave him battaile at Brimesturie, where *Adelstane*, had the victory, and slue the said King *Hawlaffe*, and the King of Scots, and five Kings of the Danes and Normans, and twelve Earles, so that he brought all the land of England and Scotland into subjection, which none of his Predecessours had ever attempted. So farre out of *Caradoc* in the British Chronicle.

Polychronicon writeth of *Hawlaffe*, that he was the sonne of *Sitricus*, and had married the daughter of *Constantine*, King of Scots, and by his aide entred the mouth of the river of Humber, wih a strong navy, and when both armies had encamped themselves, *Hawlaffe* used this policie; He tooke a Harpe, and in Harpers attire, went to *Adelstanes* Tent, where he harped, and viewed their diet, disposition, and behaviour, tooke money for his musicke, which in heart he disdayned, he secretly, as he thought, hid the money in the ground, and went away. A souldier that sometime served *Hawlaffe*, espied it, and told *Adelstane* the whole; why, saith *Adelstane*, diddest not thou acquaint me sooner? he answered, O King, the faith I owe thee now, sometime I ought to *Hawlaffe*, if I had beene false to him, thou wouldst have suspected me afterwards; but now remove thy Tent, for he will suddenly come upon thee. For all the haste that *Adelstane* made, *Hawlaffe* came in the night, slue a certaine Bishop and his company that were fleeing, and many others: hee hasted to *Adelstanes* Tent, but he was provided, and in armes, and at the breake of the day, set upon his enemies, and foiled them, as formerly is delivered.

Anno 926. (*Saxo Grammaticus*, *Albertus Krantz*, and others, are mine Authors) *Knutus* and *Herald*, sonnes to *Gormo*, King of Denmarke, following the steps of their fathers, gave themselves to Piracie; roved, crossed, and hulled upon the seas, all was fish

that came to their nets; they arrived in Ireland, and laid siege to Dublin. The King of Leinster sent especially, and laid an ambush within a mile of Dublin, and whilst the Danes scaled the wals without, the Citizens manfully defended themselves within, and others were carelesse of themselves abroad; one of the espials levelled an arrow at *Knutus*, and gave him such a wound, that he shortly dyed thereof. The Danes prevailed, but their ioy upon his death was turned into sorrow. *Gormo* the father so intirely loved this *Knutus* his sonne, that he vowed, whosoever brought him newes of the death of his sonne *Knutus*, for recompence, should die the death. *Thira*, daughter to *Edward* the Martyr, (saith *Functius*) the mother, being a Christian (though *Gormo* were a bloudy Infidell) having certaine intelligence of the death of *Knutus*, durst not reveale it, but used this policie: shee caused in stead of her husbands princely robes, (wherewith he was on a morning to make himselfe ready) mourning cloathes to bee laid before him, and such funerall exequies, as were used to be prepared for the witnessing of the sorrow and griefe conceived for the departure of some deare friend; woe is me, (saith *Gormo*) now my sonne *Knutus* is dead, this I gather by these circumstances. Then answered *Thira* the Queene, you my Lord discover it, not I. *Gormo* dyed for sorrow, and *Thira* lamented in one day the departure of her Lord and husband the King, the death of her sonne, and her owne dolefull widdowhood.

Anno 939. (so writeth *Caradoc*) *Abloic* a most worthy Prince, and Monarch of Ireland deceased.

Anno 940. after the death of *Athelstane*, his brother *Edmund* raigned over Britaine. He subdued the Danes that remained in Northumberland, together with others that came out of Ireland to invade the land with *Anlaffe* their Captaine, saith *Fabian;* he slue some, and banished the rest, so writeth *Cooper*.

Anno 948. the Abbey of the blessed Virgin *Mary*, by Dublin, was founded by the Danes.

Molanus writeth of one *Columbanus* an Abbot of Irish birth, that became a recluse or an anachorist, *Anno* 957. in the Church yard of the Monasterie of Gandavum, where he kept the space of two yeeres, and there ended his dayes. This yeere, saith *Caradoc*, *Congelach*, King of Ireland was slaine, but he sheweth not where nor how.

Anno 959. *Edgar*, the sonne of *Edmund*, beganne his raigne over England, he reduced all into one Monarchie. *Camden* found in a Charter, where *Edgar* delivered of himselfe, 'that it pleased God of his 'mercy to grant unto him, together with the command 'of England, to subdue all the Ilandish kingdomes of 'the Ocean, together with their fierce and mighty 'Kings as farre as Norwey, and the greatest part of

'Ireland, with Dublin the most noble Citie thereof, 'unto the kingdome of England.'

Anno 966. *Rodericke*, the sonne of *Edwall Voell*, Prince of Wales, was slaine by Irish men that landed there for a prey, spoyled the country, and destroyed Aberfraw. *Caradoc* so complaineth of them.

Molanus writeth of one *Forananus* a Bishop, which flourished, *Anno* 980. he termeth him Bishop of Domenormor, and Metropolitane of Ireland and Scotland: where he mightily erred in the name of the place, of the person, and his stile. For hee was Bishop of Dromore in Ireland, and no Metropolitane at all, but to his purpose hee findeth him among his Saints of Flanders, and saith, that he was warned in a vision to travaile; so that he with a company of Irish Priests, arrived in France, and came to Rome, in the time of *Benedict* 7. from thence he came backe to the Monasterie of Walciodorum, where hee and his Priests became professed Monkes, of the order of Saint *Benedict*, for the space of twelve yeeres, and there ended their dayes. The Monkes there, saith he, were wont among other Saints at Easter, yeerely to call upon him; *Sancte Foranane ora pro nobis*, untill that the reformers of Bursfeld wiped him out of the Catalogue of Saints, for that he was nôt canonized by the Church of Rome.

Anno 988. (as I finde in the British Chronicle)

Elwmaen, the sonne of *Abloic*, King of Ireland, was slaine, and a great number of people dyed with famine; that is alwaies the end of civill warres and rebellion in Ireland.

Anno 1004. the Scots (I know not the cause) entred Ireland, and after their manner, as also the Danes did then in England, preyed, burned, and destroyed: they tooke *Gulfath* and *Vbiad*, Irish Lords, and put out their eyes, they ransacked also the Citie of Dublin.

Anno 1012. *Grace* and *Dowlinge*, the Irish Antiquaries doe concurre, (the English Writers are silent) and deliver how that *Bernaidus*, commonly called *Brian Bowrow*, Monarch of Ireland, and his sonne *Murcath, alias Murchardus Mac Brian*, with other Kings of the land subiect unto him, gathered great power, and met at Clantarfe, nigh Dublin, and gave a sore battaile unto *Sutraic, alias Sutric*, the sonne of *Abloic*, King of Dublin, and unto *Moilmordha*, King of Leinster. This *Sutric*, to withstand the Monarch, had hired to his aide, all manner of strangers he could get by sea or by land, as Danes, Norwegians, Scots, Britaines, Pirates, and sea rovers. The fight was desperate, the field all bloud, a horse (they say) was sometime to his belly in bloud. There were slaine that day of the one side, *Brian* the Monarch, and his sonne *Murchard;* of the other side, *Moilmordha* King of Leinster, *Rodericke* the Arch-Pirate, and Captaine of the strangers, with others of both sides innumera-

ble. *Sutrick* was sore wounded, was brought to Dublin, and shortly after died of his wound. I pray thee gentle Reader, who got by the bargaine? As farre as ever I could learne, a woman set them together by the eares.

The Booke of *Houth*, after the Irish observation, delivereth the story thus. There was a Merchant in Dublin, commonly called the *white Merchant*, a Dane, the fourth sonne of the King of Denmarke who had a faire wife of Irish birth, and he being full of iealousie, and ready to travaile for merchandize into farre countries, desired of *Brian Borow*, Monarch of Ireland, that his wife (untill his returne) might waite upon his Lady, soiourne in his house for the safeguard of her person, credit, and honestie, the which was granted, and the King undertooke it. This Merchant made as speedy a returne as he could, and being landed early in a morning, with a privy key, entred the chamber where his wife lay, and found *Morogh Mac Brian* the Kings sonne in bed with his wife; hee wheeled about, devising what was best to be done, at length resolving himselfe to depart for that time, tooke *Moroghs* sword, and put it into his owne scabbard, and his into *Moroghs* scabbard. Hee went to the King, and complained of the abuse here spoken of; the King answered, 'He is my sonne, give thou 'iudgement upon him; *saith the Merchant*, let him 'keepe the whore still, I will be revenged upon him 'and his partakers in the field, as soone as possibly

'may be, and I doubt not but all Ireland shall rue 'the day of this villanie.' Immediately he went to Denmarke, brought over to his aide, thirty thousand Danes and Norwegians, landed at Clantarfe, whereof the field was called the field of Clantarfe; hee summoned *Morogh* and his favourites to fight, and thought at the first to have taken Dublin. *Brian Borow* fearing this, made more haste then good speed, tarried not for the forces of the land, that were comming with his sonne *Donogh* to his aide, but rashly with his sonne *Morogh*, (the Author of all this mischiefe) gave them battaile. The which battaile all the forenoone being cruelly fought, seemed all to leane on the Irish side, but in the afternoone, the Danes that were in the rere, and yet fresh for any fight they had, were directed to wheele about, and to take the voward unknowne unto the Irish, which fiercely fought and encountred with the wearie and wounded Irish, and wonne the field. Here was *Brian Borow*, and his sonne *Morogh*, and eleven thousand of the Irish slaine.

One thing further (gentle reader) note, there was a Priests sonne, accounted a tall man of armes, who in the beginning of the battaile, fled away, fearing the hardinesse of the Danes and Norwegians, and went to *Donogh Mac Brian*, the brother of *Morogh*, who was comming with forces to the field, and perswaded him to retraict; saying further, that there was no hope of good successe to bee obtained in this field. This man

being taken, confessed the whole treason, and for punishment, was carried to the winde gates, twelve miles from Dublin, set alive standing in the ground, with a great heape of stones about him, as it pleased the Commanders to direct. In *Stanihurst* I finde that the the chiefe Potentates of the Irish, were *Brian Borow*, *Miagh Mac Brian*, (whom formerly I termed *Morogh*) *Tady O Kelly*, *Dolir Ahertegan*, and *Gille Barramed*, and that they were buried at Kilmaniham, over against the great Crosse.

Anno 1031. as it is remembred by *Caradoc* in the British Chronicles, there was great stirre and bloudshed in South-Wales, by the meanes of *Howell* and *Meredith*, the sonnes of *Edwyn ap Evean ap Owen ap Howell Dha*, that made claime unto that country against *Rytherch ap Iestyn*, Prince of South-Wales. *Howell* and *Meridith* hired unto them a King of Ireland, (whose name is not set downe) which brought with him a great armie of Irish-Scots; the armies met, the fight was cruell, much bloud on both sides was shed, in the end, *Rytherch* the Prince was discomfited and slaine, by which means they attained unto the governement of South-Wales, the which they ioyntly ruled, and bountifully rewarded the Irish King.

There is at Sauntrie, some three miles from Dublin, yeerely remembrance of Saint *Pappan* that was borne there. *Molanus* calleth him *Poppon*. He

travailed into France, builded there many Monasteries, (saith mine Author) and preferred to governe them many men, became an Abbot himselfe, and departed this life, *Anno* 1048. and lyeth buried at Stabuletum in France, where hee governed. Lastly, mine Author noteth, that he was a Saint, but never canonized.

Conan, the sonne of *Iago*, Prince of North-Wales, married *Ranulph*, the daughter of *Alfred*, King of Dublin, who in the warres betweene *Iago* his father, and *Griffith* the sonne of *Lhewelyn ap Sitsylte*, sometimes King of Wales, (saith *Caradoc*) was driven to flee into Ireland for safegard of his life. This *Conan*, *Anno* 1041. came with *Alfred* his father in law, with great power out of Ireland, to recover his country: they shortly landed in Wales, and by treason, secretly tooke *Griffith* the King, and carried him towards their ships, but when it was knowne, the country upon the sodaine rose, armed themselves, followed the Irish men, made great slaughter of them, rescued their Prince, and drove *Alfred* and *Conan*, with the rest of their forces, to their shippes, and so to Ireland.

Stow following *Fabian*, writeth how that *Anno* 1049. certaine forces out of Ireland, (whom hee calleth Irish Pirates) with 36. ships, entred the mouth of Severne, landed in a place called Westlapham, and with the helpe of *Griffith* King of South-Wales, spoyled along those coasts, and did great mischiefe.

Afterwards *Griffith*, and those Irish Pyrates, ioyning their powers together, passed over the river Wie, and burnt Dumenham, and slue man, woman, and childe, leaving nothing behinde them, but bloud and ashes. Worcester, Glocester, and Herefordshire, rose in Armes against them, but many of them in cruell fight being slaine, the rest put to flight, the Irish returned home merrily, loaden with spoyle.

Anno 1050. *Conan* gathered an armie of his friends in Ireland, attempting the second time the recoverie of his inheritance, he hoysed up saile towards Wales, but on a sodaine there arose such a tempest upon the seas, that scattered his Navie, and drowned the most part of his ships, so that he gave over the voyage for that time.

About this time (wherein the English and British historiographers doe agree) *Robert*, Archbishop of Canterbury, accused Earle *Godwin* and his five sonnes, (especially *Swaine* and *Harold*) of treason, and Queene *Editha* the daughter of *Godwin*, of adulterie, who being called before the King, refused to appeare, and therefore were banished the land, and the Queene was put away from the King. *Godwin* and *Swaine* fled to Flanders, *Harold* and *Leofwin* (*Warwell* saith *Holinshead*) to Ireland, and the Queene was sent with one Maid to the Monasterie of Wilton. Immediately the King disposed of all their possessions. It was not long after ere *Godwin* and *Swaine* got shippes, men, munition, and all necessaries in Flanders, the like did

Harold and *Leofwin* in Ireland, they all met upon the seas, to wit, the father, the mother, and the five sonnes; they spoyled the Ile of Wight, Partland, Peveneseny, Romny-heath, Folkeston, Dover, and Sandwich, and entring the Thames, destroyed Sheppey, and burned the Kings houses at Mielton. Then they met with the kings Fleet upon the seas, and being ready to fight, Bishop *Stigand* stept betweene them, and reconciled both sides in such sort, that the King restored them their lands and goods, tooke home the Queene, and banished *Robert* the Archbishop, with all the French men which had put buzzes and suspitions into the Kings head.

Anno 1054. as *Powell* in his annotations upon *Caradoc*, hath learnedly collected; King *Edward* by evill counsell (as it was thought) banished *Algar*, Earle of Chester, which had treason laid to his charge, whereupon *Algar* gate him into Ireland, and there providing him eighteene shippes of warre, well appointed and manned with stalworth men, of Irish birth, returned and joyned himselfe with *Griffith*, King or Prince of Wales, who both together invaded the country of Mercia about Hereford, where *Ranulph*, Earle of that country (who was sonne to King *Edwards* sister, named *Goda*, by her first husband *Walter de Manut*) came against them with a great armie, and met them about two miles from Hereford, where after a sore fight, by the space of three houres, *Ranulph* and his armie were discomfited, and about 500. of them

slaine, and the rest put to flight, whom *Griffith* and *Algar* pursued to Hereford, and entring the towne, set the Cathedrall Church on fire, and slue the Bishop named *Leogar*, with seven of the Canons, and most lamentably (as it falleth out in warres) spoyled and burned the towne. King *Edward* being advertised hereof, gathered an armie, and sent *Harold* the sonne of Earle *Godwin* against them, who pursuing the enemies to North-Wales, passed through Stradlewyde to Snowdon: but *Griffith* and *Algar* being loath to meete *Harold*, got them againe into South-Wales, whereof *Harold* being advertised, left one part of his armie in North-Wales, to resist the enemy there, and returning with the residue to Hereford, caused a great trench to be cast round about the towne, with a high rampire, strongly fortifying the gates of the same. After this, by meanes of a parlee had with *Griffith* and *Algar*, at a place called Biligellagh, a peace was concluded, whereupon *Algar* being pardoned by the King, and restored againe to his Earledome, returned home to Chester.

About two yeeres after, *Algar* was accused againe of treason, and the second time exiled the land, fled into Ireland, where he was most ioyously received of his old followers, and offered more kindenesse, then he requested, for hee had most honourably dealt with the Merchants and owners of the former ships, and most kindely intreated, and bounteously rewarded the Irish

souldiers, the which then in his second extremity, was not forgotten. With shippes, men and munition, out of Ireland, he bent his course to Wales, repaired to his old friend *Griffith*, Prince of Wales, where he was most welcome, and shortly restored againe to his Earldome by the meanes and intreaty of certaine strangers, which had lately there arrived out of Norway.

Camden writeth how that *Anno* 1066. *Godred*, surnamed *Cronan*, the sonne of *Hirald nigar*, of Island, invaded the Ile of Man, thence came into Ireland, did the like unto Dublin, and a great part of Leynster, made great spoyle, and went backe againe.

The British Chronicle reporteth of *Dermot*, (a King in Ireland) that in *Anno* 1068. he was murthered, but the manner hee sheweth not; the commendation he giveth of him is this: *He was the worthiest and noblest Prince that ever ruled in Ireland.*

Polychronicon reporteth, how that *Anno* 1072. at Winsore before *William* the Conquerour, and the Cleargie, the controversie between the Archbishops of Canterbury and Yorke was heard at large, and decided, and that *Bedaes* historie was shewed, where it appeared that from *Austen* the Monkes time, till *Bedaes* death, (about 140. yeeres) the Archbishop of Canterburie had primacie over all Great Britaine & Ireland, that he had held Councels by Yorke, summoned

Bishops of Yorke, consecrated Bishops, and punished Bishops of Yorke for their offences, and iudicially removed them.

Philip Flatesburie a great Antiquarie, whom *Stanihurst* followeth, and *Iames Grace* of Kilkenny, with *Dowlinge* his ioynt Collectour doe write, how that *Anno* 1074. *Patricke*, Bishop of Dublin, was consecrated in *Pauls* Church in London, by *Lanfranke*, Archbishop of Canterburie, upon commendatorie Letters of *Teridionatus*, *alias Terdilnacus*, Monarch of Ireland, and *Godericke*, King of Leinster, and with *teste* of the Clergie and Laytie of that Diocesse of his lawfull and orderly election. Further I finde recorded, that it was the manner to consecrate Bishops in this sort, and that the Monarch of Ireland in regard of his royall principalitie and title of honour with other priviledges belonging to his Monarchie, had negative voyce in the nomination of Bishops throughout his Realme. Secondly, how the Archbishop of Canterbury took of him that was so consecrated, a corporall oath of Canonicall obedience (as his predecessours formerly used) to him and his successors; and lastly, gave him letters testimoniall thereof to the Monarch and King of Leynster.

Cambrensis sheweth the reason of this consecration, namely, how that in Ireland as then, there was no Archbishop, but one Bishop consecrated another, untill that *Anno* 1148. *Iohannes Papiron*, a Priest

Cardinall, sent from *Eugenius* 3. together with *Christian*, Bishop of Lismore, Legate of all Ireland, came to the land, and brought with them foures Paales. But of this more in another place.

The same *Flattesburie* writeth further, how that the said *Lanfranke* in like sort consecrated *Donatus*, Bishop of Dublin, *Anno* 1085.

About this time, *Godwin* and *Edmund*, sonnes to King *Harold*, (my Author is *Thomas Walsingham*, Monke of Saint Albans) which formerly had fled into Ireland for succour, unto *Dermotte Mac O' Nell*, King of Ireland, returned with 66. saile, landed in Sommersetshire, (saith *Stow*) where *Brian*, the sonne of *Eudo*, Duke of Brabant, met them and gave them battaile, wherein (saith *Stow*) the brethren gate the victory, and the Irish men with many great preyes out of Cornewall and Devonshire returned into Ireland. But *Walsingham* (which seemeth more true) writeth that it was a bloudie battaile, wherein 1070. of the English and Normans, with certaine of the Nobilitie of the land, were slaine, and the enemies with aide of their ships, fled, and brought heavy newes home to their deerest friends in Ireland.

It is very like that *William* the Conquerour immediately upon this, sent great forces into Ireland, to bee revenged of them for relieving or assisting his enemies: for *Stow* writeth out of *William* of Malmsbury,

thus: 'Lanfranck, Archbishop of Canterbury, being 'in such favour with King *William*, that the said 'William thought not good to deny any thing that 'hee requested, procured by his industrie, that the 'said King left his ill custome of selling his prisoners 'which hee tooke in Ireland, which was a thing 'hardly granted unto him, and to *Wolstan*, Bishop of 'Worcester, the gaine that the King had by the sale 'of those Irish men was such.'

The British Chronicle reporteth how that *Anno* 1087. and the last yeere of *William* Conquerour, the sonnes of *Blethlyn ap Convyn*, sometime King of Wales, gathered their strength together against *Rees ap Tyder*, who not being able to meete with them, fled to Ireland, and there he purchased to himselfe great friends, and got an armie of Irish men and Scots, to whom hee promised great rewards when he should obtaine his kingdome, & so landed in South-Wales with these strangers, and when his friends heard thereof, they drew unto him, and the other came in all haste to vanquish him before hee had made a head, and gathered forces together; to bee short, at Wechryd they gave battaile, where they were discomfited, and two of the brethren slaine, to wit, *Madoc* and *Kirid*, and the other fled and forsooke the country. As soone as *Rees* was in quiet possession of his country, he sent away the Irish men with great rewards.

All the Lords of the Ilands sent messengers unto

Murchard, alias Moragh O Brien, King of Ireland, that it would please him to send them some worthy man of royall bloud to be their King, during the nonage of *Olanus,* the sonne sonne of *Godred,* King of Man. Whereupon he sent them one *Dopnald Mac Tady,* whom hee deepely charged to governe that kingdome, which of right appertained not to him, with all kindenesse, love, and modesty; but hee was no sooner warm in the kingdome, but he forgot his instructions, and the charge his Lord hath given him, he poled, he pilled, and practised all kinde of tyranny, for the space of three yeers. Then all the Lords of the Ilands rose in armes against him, and banished him out of those parts, so he fled into Ireland, of whom they never heard any further newes.

Stanihurst findeth that *Anno* 1095. there came certaine Esterlings to the North side of Dublin adjoyning to the Liffie, and seated themselves there, so that of them to this day, the place is called Ostomontowne, and corruptly, Oxmonton, and the Parish, Saint *Michans,* of one *Michanus* a Dane and a Bishop which founded the Church, unto whom *Murchard,* or *Moragh* King of Leynster, gave that parcell of land to that use. The faire greene or Commune, now called Ostmontowne-greene, was all wood, and hee that diggeth at this day to any depth, shall finde the ground full of great rootes. From thence, *Anno* 1098. King *William Rufus,* by licence of *Murchard,* had that frame which made up the roofe of Westminster

Hall, where no English Spider webbeth or breedeth to this day.

Cambrensis in his Itinerarie of Cambria, reporteth, how that King *William* standing upon some high rocke in the farthest part of Wales, beheld Ireland, and said, I will have the shippes of my kingdome brought hither, wherewith I will make a bridge to invade this land: *Murchard* King of Leynster heard thereof, and after he had paused awhile, asked of the reporter; hath the King in that his great threatning, inserted these words, *if it please God?* No, then (said he) seeing this King putteth his trust onely in man, and not in God, I feare not his comming.

Anno 1095. *Murchard,* (so writeth *Holinshed) alias Morogh,* King of Leynster, with the Clergie, and people of the Citie of Dublin, elected one *Samuel* a Monke of Saint *Albans,* an Irish man borne, to the governement of the Church, and Bishops See of Dublin, and according to the antient custome, presented him by sufficient letters of testimony unto *Anselme* Archbishop of Canterburie, to be consecrated by him, who (according to their request) did so, and tooke of him an oath of Canonicall obedience after the usuall manner.

Anno 1097. the Citizens of Waterford perceiving that by reason of the great multitude of people in that citie, it was necessarie for them to have a Bishop,

obtained licence of their King and Rulers, to erect in their Citie, a Bishops See, and besought them to write to *Anselme*, Archbishop of Canterburie, to have his consent therein, and permitted them to nominate a man meete for the place. Hereupon *Morogh* King of Leynster, wrote unto *Anselme*, informing him of the whole matter, wherein one *Malchus* was commended and presented unto him to be admitted and consecrated if he thought good; these letters were subscribed by *Murchard*, King of Leynster, *Dermotte* his brother, Bishop *Dufnald*, *Idiman*, Bishop of Meath, *Samuel*, Bishop of Dublin, and *Ferdomnachus*, a Bishop in Leynster. *Anselme* considering their request to be honest and necessarie, examined the man, gave him the oath of Canonicall obedience, and consecrated *Malcus* Bishop of Waterford.

About this time, to wit, *Anno* 1098. the Normans having slaine *Rees ap Twyde*, Prince of South-Wales, they bent their forces against *Griffith ap Conan*, Prince of North-Wales, by the conduct of *Hugh de Montgomerie*, Earle of Saloppe and Arundell, (called of the Welchmen, *Hugh Gough*,) and of *Hugh Vras*, Earle of Chester. *Griffith* the Prince fled to the mountaines, and sent for aide into Ireland, (saith *Caradoc*) where he received cold comfort, then to avoid farther mischiefe and treason, which hee suspected to have beene wrought against him, fled into Ireland. In the same season, *Magnus* King of Norway (so *Stow* calleth him) the sonne of *Olavus*, the sonne

of *Harold Harvager*, came with great forces, and subdued the Iles of Orknay, with the Ile of Man, entred into Anglesey, incountred with *Hugh*, Earle of Salop, who withstood his landing, in the which skirmish, *Hugh* the Earle had an arrow shot in his face, which pierced his braine, of which he died; whereupon the Normans retraited. *Magnus* invadeth Ireland (saith *Saxo Grammaticus*) and *Griffith* the Prince of Wales returned to his country, and made peace with the Normans, and governed the same fiftie yeeres. Many things worthy of memory are recorded of this *Griffith ap Conan*. *Powell* writeth that hee was an Irish man by his mother, daughter of the King of Dublin, and also by his Grandmother, and that hee was borne in Ireland, and that he brought over with him out of that country into Wales, divers cunning Musitians, who devised in manner, all the instrumentall musicke upon the Harpe and Crowth that is there used, and made lawes of minstrelsee to retaine the Musitians in due order.

I have not yet done with *Magnus* the Norwegian, of him *Camden* writeth a worthy storie. *Magnus* (saith he) caused a fleete to bee in readinesse of an 160. saile, and sailed into the Orkeneys, the which he forthwith subdued, he passed through all the Ilands, made them subject unto him, and arrived in the Ile of Man; when hee beheld how pleasant the Iland was, he made choice thereof for habitation, fortified therein, which of him to this day beares his name. Hée so

hampered the inhabitants of Galloway in Scotland, that hee made them bring him timber to his Port for the frame of his fortifications. Afterward he sailed to Anglesey in Wales, where he met with two *Hughs*, both Earles, the one he slue, the other he put to flight, and made the Iland subiect unto him. The Welsh men gave him many gifts and rewards, he bade them farewell, and so returned to Man. He sent to *Murchard, alias Morogh*, King of Ireland, his shooes, commanding him to hang them upon his shoulders upon Christmas day as he passed through his Hall, in the sight of his Embassadors, that thereby he might understand that he was subject to *Magnus* the king. When the Irish men heard thereof, they tooke it in ill part, and chafed exceedingly, but King *Morogh*, a wise and a sage Prince, smiling at the conceit, with great modesty and discretion gave this answer. I will not onely beare his shooes, but I had rather eate them, then that King *Magnus* should destroy any one Province in Ireland. Whereupon he fulfilled his command, honoured his Ambassadors, sent many Presents unto King *Magnus*, and concluded a league. The Ambassadors upon their returne, related all circumstances gave great report and commendation of the land, delivered how pleasant and fruitfull the soile was, the temperature of the ayre, and how healthfull the dwelling was. *Magnus* hearing this, immediately it ranne in his head to conquer all Ireland; he commanded a great fleet to be in a readinesse, and he himselfe going before with sixteene saile privily to espie

and search out the strength of the land, and unadvisedly ranging from his shippes, was upon a sodaine compassed and hemmed in by the Irishmen, and slaine, with all in a manner that were with him. Thus *Magnus* is become *Minimus*, in fine, hee was buried in Saint *Patrickes* Church of Downe. So farre *Camden* in substance. The British Chronicle writeth, how that before this insolent attempt, he had procured for his sonne, a daughter of King *Morogh* in marriage, and that he made him King of Man, but I doe not finde that he enjoyed it.

Carodoc writeth, how that *Anno* 1101. *Robert de Mountgomerie*, Earle of Salop, and *Arnulph* his brother, Earle of Pembroke, rebelling against King *Henry*, *Robert* sent for aide to *Magnus*, but could get none, *Arnulph* sent *Gerald* of *Windesore*, his Steward to *Murchard*, *alias Morogh*, King of Ireland, to desire his daughter in marriage, the which hee obtained with promise of great succours, which did encourage him the more against the King; whereupon *Arnulph* went with all haste into Ireland for his wife and Irish forces. Earle *Robert* seeing himselfe disappointed, sent to the King, desiring him that he might forsake the Realme, which thing the King granted, and he sailed into Normandie. *Arnulph* received message from the King, that either he should follow his brother, and depart the land, or yeeld himselfe to his mercie, he chose to forsake the land, and fled inte Ireland. Not long after, *Owen* the sonne of *Cadogan*,

after hee had done great mischiefe and spoile upon the English, Normans, Flemings, and Welsh men, fled into Ireland to King *Morogh*, who joyfully received him, for he had beene there before, returned to Wales, and fled thither the second time, and in like sort the third time.

Anno 1113. or thereabout, *Griffith* the sonne of *Rees ap Twyder*, Prince of South-Wales, who for feare of the King, had beene of a childe brought up in Ireland, came to *Gerald*, Steward of Pembroke his brother in law, and others of his friends, to recover his country, whom the King by secret policies and practises pursued, so that hee was forced to flee againe.

In the time of King *Henry* the first, I finde that there was great stirre betweene *Murchard* or *Morogh*, King of Leynster, and the Citizens of Dublin, for it seemeth that he used grievous exactions and tyrannies over them, so that the Dublinians in revenge of him, sent for *Godred*, King of Man, and the Ilands, so writeth *Camden*, and made him their King. *Morogh* mustereth his country, gathereth forces, procureth aide, marcheth against his enemies, pitcheth his campe at the towne of Coridelis, sent his brother (by the mothers side) *Osibell*, with three thousand horse well appointed to Dublin, where hee was slaine by *Godred*, and by the men of Dublin, and the rest discomfited and put to flight. *Godred* found himselfe well satisfied with spoiles, and returned to Man; they of Dublin

likewise thought themselves in some sort reasonably well revenged of their King, quitted themselves for a while, and by mediation and intercession after many Presents and Gifts were reconciled. There was great banquetting and feasting, and ioy outward of all sides, but inward, lay venome and treason, like sparkles of fire covered with ashes, which broke forth not long after, as I am readie to deliver. *Stanihurst*, *Grace*, and *Dowlinge* doe write, that the Councell of the Citie determining to establish and decree many good lawes and orders, for the publike weale of the towne, and commons of the same, appointed a solemne day of meeting, sent for *Morogh* their King, humbly craving with all loyall circumstances, his presence, counsaile, and assistance among them at the day appointed, the which hee granted; when the day came, and that they had debated many matters, the King as he sate merrily in his chaire, sporting himselfe, and reporting some pleasant historie, one suddenly stept unto him, and tooke away his weapon, the rest came upon him, and stabbed him to the death; they were not content with this, but they cast him into a base grave, and in further contempt and dispute of his person, they threw a dogge upon him, and earth upon them both, the which *Dermotte* his sonne revenged afterwards, as shall appeare in processe of the historie.

About the yeere 1134. after *Furctius* his computation, one *Harold*, borne in Ireland, (so writeth *Saxo*) gathered forces, and became the terrrour of Norway,

affirming withall, that he was the sonne of *Magnus* the Dane that invaded Ireland, and for truth thereof, he would declare it by fire. When the time and place was appointed, with his bare feet he trode upon a fierie plate, and felt no hurt: the Norwegians admired, and would make him their King, which was the roote of many mischiefes in Norway. He was a man faire spoken, strong, hardy, and swift of foot, and it seemeth, after the manner of Ireland, that he went much bare, so that the soles of his feet were as hard as horne, and could not easily take harme by fire, by which meanes he deceived the Norwegians. *Nicholaus*, King of Denmarke, corrupted *Magnus* of Norway by secret meanes to cut him off. *Magnus* practised with *Ericus* a Danish Captaine, to dispatch him immediately after his Coronation. To bee short, *Ericus* came with great forces to Scypetors, (a Village where *Herald* was) in the night time, laid siege to his Pallace, and by the breake of day, pulled him and his sonnes forth by the head and shoulders, and put them to death.

In the time of *Henry* 1. King of England, flourished *Celsus*, Bishop of Armagh, and ended his dayes with the entrance of King *Stephen* to the Crowne. He descended of Noble Parentage in Ireland, whom Saint *Bernard* with others, for divers rare and singular gifts, highly commendeth; he had beene brought up in the Vniversitie of Oxenford, where in the liberall sciences, and profound literature, he excelled others of his time; when he perceived by the infirmi-

ties of his body, that age hastened to an end, and that his naturall course was in short time to be finished, he desired of them that were present, their favours, and prayed them to use meanes unto others that were absent, and especially unto the two Kings of Mounster, (so *Bernard* writeth) that *Malachias* might succeed him in the Bishopricke of Armagh. He was a married man, and died of great age, and lyeth buried with his wife and children in the said Church.

Malachias in the time of King *Stephen*, succeeded *Celsus* in the Bishopricke of Armagh, whose life Saint *Bernard*, Abbot of Clarevallis, *Capgrave* and *Conganus*, an Abbot of Ireland have written at large. He was borne in Ireland amongst barbarous people (saith *Bernard*) yet in his birth and native soile, hee sucked of them no more barbarousnesse, then the Sea fish take of the salt water. His Parents for wealth and might, were in great account in those dayes; he was brought up at Armagh, under *Imarius* the Anachorite, where *Celsus* made him both Deacon and Priest at the age of 25. yeeres, from thence with licence of *Imarius* and of *Celsus*, he went to *Malchus*, Bishop of Lismore in Mounster, a man of Irish birth, that had beene a Monke sometimes in the Abbey of Winchester in England, and from thence advanced to the Bishopricke of Lismore. And to make the historie plaine, there was at that time, great warres betweene *Cormacke*, King of Mounster, and his brother for the Soveraignty; the brother prevaileth, *Cormacke*

fleeth to the Bishop of Lismore, and in his distressed estate, tooke a Monkes Cell, and led a private life. *Malachias* was appointed his Tutor, where *Cormacke* continued untill that a King there adjoyning, pittying his miserie, gathered forces, and restored him to his kingdome.

Immediately after this, Letters came for *Malachias* in most earnest sort, that he should come to Armagh, where not farre off, an Vncle of his, a man of great command, a Lord of a country, rich and potent (that held in his hands all the wasted Monasterie of *Benchor, alias Bengor*) dwelled; of which Monasterie I have spoken before in the raigne of King *Arthure*. *Malachias* upon his comming, restored these possessions, and reedifieth the old Monasterie, and appointed one *Malchus*, brother to *Christianus*, Abbot of Mellefont, governour of the place; when *Malachias* was thirty yeeres of age, he was made Bishop of Conor, (Conorets saith *Bernard*) where hee met by his owne report, (more then I am willing to lay downe in writing) so rude and barbarous a people, as worse could not be found upon the face of the earth, yet the holy man ceased not to travaile among them by preaching and teaching, and by all meanes possible to winne them; not long after, a certaine King of Vlster destroyed Conor, and put the people to the sword, burned and spoyled, and made havocke of all, whereupon *Malachias* with a hundred and twenty brethren, fled to Mounster, where King *Cormake* gave him great

entertainement, and ayded him greatly in the building of the Monastery of Ybrak. By this time, *Celsus* spoken of before, fell sicke and dyed. The rude people thrust in *Mauritius* that usurped the place some five yeeres, then *Malchus*, Bishop of Lismore, and *Gistebertus* the first Legate that came to Ireland, from the Pope, called the Bishops and Princes of the land together, appointed *Malachias* for the place. And when death had swiftly cut off the intruder *Mauritius*, that damnable nation thrust in *Nigellus*, but he prospered not long, so that *Malachias* enjoyed it quietly. Of the injury done to that Church, and the abuse of that time, heare *Bernard*, (as he learned of *Conganus* and others) report. The see of Ardmach (saith *Bernard*) for the reverence and honour of Saint *Patricke* the Apostle of that nation, which converted that whole land to the faith, in the which See living, he ruled, and in which dying, he rested, is had of all men from the beginning, in so great reverence, that not onely the Bishops and Ministers of the Clergie, but the Kings and Princes of that nation, carry themselves in all obedience unto their Metropolitane, so shat he being one, ruleth all: but there crept in a most detestable custome, through the divellish ambition of certaine mighty men, that the holy See was obtained by inheritable succession, neither were any suffered to enjoy the Bishopricke, but such as were of their tribe and familie, neither did this execrable succession hold for a small time, but for the space of fifteene generations, now in this diabolicall malice elapsed. And so

farre this wicked and adulterous generation had confirmed to it selfe this lewd interest, yea rather an injurie to be punished with all manner of death, that if at any time there should want Clerks of that race, yet never wanted Bishops. To be short, there were before *Celsus*, eight Bishops married men, besides himselfe, without orders, yet learned men; from hence over all Ireland, issued that dissolution of ecclesiastiall discipline, which *Malachias* found in Conor, the rooting out of godly censure, and the abandoning of religion; from hence every where in stead of Christian meeknesse, was brought in cruell barbarousnesse, yea, paganisme and infidelity under a Christian name; for that which was not heard of from the originall of Christianitie, without order, without reason, the Metropolitans at their pleasure changed, and increased the number of Bishops, so that one Bishopricke contented not it selfe with one Bishop, and no marvaile, for how could it fare well with the members of so diseased a head? they possessed the Sanctuary of God in this sort, the space well neere of two hundred yeeres; hee meaneth unto the dayes of *Celsus* and *Malachias*. *Cambrensis* in his itinerarie of *Cambria*, had relation no doubt unto this, where he with *Baldwin*, Archbishop of Canterbury, in visitation about Wales, came to the Church called *lure padaen vacor*, that is, *the Church of great Paternus*, mis-stiled with the governement therof, for thus he writeth: 'This Church, 'like as many more throughout Ireland and Wales, 'hath a Laye man to their Abbot, use hath prevailed,

'and a lewd custome hath crept in, that great and 'mighty men in Parishes, have beene by the Clergie 'appointed Patrons and defendors; afterwards have 'usurped unto themselves the right thereof.' Immediately hee reporteth of a travailer that came hither out of little Britaine in France, that had for his further knowledge seene many countries, and fashions of sundry nations, and entring into the said Church on the Sabbath day, wayted for divine Service, they rung the Bell, they tould, they waited long, at length came in the Abbot, with some twenty after him in armes, and wilde lookes, every one having (*fon villuge*, so the Britaines termed it) a forrest Bill on his shoulder; the travailer asked which is the Abbot, answer was made the formost, with the greatest forrest Bill; the travailer asked, hath he any other ornament, or doth he use any other weede? answer being made, no, then said hee, I have travailed farre enough, I will see no more fashions whilst I live, after that I have seene an Abbot carry a forrest Bill upon his backe. Now to returne whence I have made this digression, for the abuse of the Church causeth me to abuse the reader.

Malachias, when he had peaceably enioyed Ardmagh some three yeeres, with the consent of the three Bishops and Princes, he resigned his place to *Gelasius*, and returned to his former Bishopricke, not of Conor, but of Dune, for he had placed one in Conor before, to wit, *Oedanus* his disciple; here *Bernard* noteth that where Dune and Conor were before this time

united through ambition and covetousnesse, this man of devotion and conscience, separated them againe, dividing the Churches as they had beene of old, for the good will hē bare to Armagh, he tooke his iourney towards Rome, landed in Scotland, came to Yorke, sailed to France, and lodged at Clarevallis; hee came to Rome in the time of *Innocentius* 2. who made him his Legate of Ireland, in the roomth of *Gislebert*, the old man spoken of before, which had made sute to be removed. *Boniface* appointed Armagh to be a Metropolitane See, but did not effect it, and promised the pall which he did not performe; *Bernard* maketh mention of two Metropolitan Sees, one procured by *Celsus*, the other by *Malachias*; but where and how I finde no antient record. *Bale* is of opinion they were in *vocibus*, and not in *rebus*, for lacke of money to pay for them. Vpon his returne hee came to Clarevallis, thence to England, so to Scotland, (where King *David* most royally entertained him) and lastly, to his Abbey of Benchor in Vlster. Of his conversation, heare *Bernard*: 'from the day of his birth, 'to the day of his death, hee lived *sine proprio*,' without claiming propertie in any thing; he had neither men servants, nor maid servants, neither townes nor villages, neither any reuenue ecclesiasticall or temporall in his Bishopricke; for his provision, *(ad mensam episcopalem)* hee had no certainty allotted him whereupon a Bishop might live, hee had no certaine Monastery or dwelling place, for hee daily went about all the Parishes, preaching the Gospell, and living by

the Gospell, as the Lord had ordained, saying, the labourer is worthy of his reward; of his labours and such as travelled with him, he carried about to relieve them all; to be short, *Malachias* neither in dyet or rayment was discerned from the rest of the brethren; when he went a preaching with footmen, he went on foot, being a Bishop and a Legate: and here *Bernard* exclaimeth, when he entreth into the consideration of the difference betweene him and his brethren, and the nephewes of the Apostles, so he calleth them. Towards his latter dayes, hee sorrowed that Ireland had not the pall, and as oft as he thought upon *Innocentius* 2. his promise, he sighed, who (as formerly I have delivered) had promised, not performed; when he heard that *Eugenius*. his successor was come unto France, he thought it a fit time to obtaine his purpose, he tooke shipping for Scotland, where King *David* received him as in times past, and thence unto England, where the jarre betweene the King of England, and the Pope, hindred his passage, yet he got into France, and straight to Clarevallis, where hearing that Pope *Eugenius* was returned to Rome, he rested himselfe, fell sicke of an ague, and there dyed, being of the age of 54. yeeres, *Anno* 1148. 4 *Nonas Novembris*, so farre *Bernard* in substance, yet *Antonine* saith hee dyed, *Anno* 1140.

In his time lived *Conganus*, Abbot of Benchor, who enformed *Bernard* of the whole life of *Malachias*, and wrote at large thereof himselfe, inserting many

fabulous things, and saith *Nicholas Magwire*, he wrote not onely the life of *Malachias*, but also the life of *Bernard*. I finde him to be the Patron of Killaskin, otherwise called Killeshin, in Monte Margeo, and the Barony of Marghagha in Leynster, spoken of before.

In this time lived *Tundalus Magus*, so surnamed, because suspected for a Sorcerer, borne and brought up in Mounster (in Cashell, saith *Lepelo*, in the West of Ireland) of Noble birth, and by calling a Knight: *Antonius* out of *Vincentius* reporteth, that hee was fierce and cruell, and in the end became a Carthusian Monke, for that order beganne as we may reade in the life of *Bruno*, the first founder thereof, upon some great extremity, (whereof the Proverbe rose, *desperatio facit Monachum*, desperation maketh a Monke) it seemeth that he had in his life time committed some hainous offences, and was mightily tormented in conscience, and fell into trances and extasies; upon his recovery he delivered unto the world, strange and damnable untruths, (saith *Bale*) of Heaven, Hell, Purgatory, and I wot not what, for a man distracted, knoweth not what he saith. *Bale* writeth, *Talia ad terrorem fingebant scelestissimi; Nebolones* somewhat excusing him, and extenuating his imbecillities and biddeth him farewell: *Clarint Stephano Rege in Anglia dominante; & satana apud Hybernos suas vires exercente;* hee flourished when *Stephen* raigned over England, and the divell domineered over

Ireland. Hee wrote a booke of Revelations, the which *Melchior Canus*, *Albertus Crantzius*, and *Gobelenus* have utterly condemned. He wrote also the life of *Vrsula*, and the 11000. Virgins, printed at Cullen, the which *Zazarias Lepelo* counteth for lyes and fables.

Anno 1142. the Abbey of Molyfont was founded by *Donatus*, *alias Donogh*, King of Louth, *alias Vriell*, some call him *Donogh Ocarvell;* the first Abbot was *Christianus*, who afterwards was Bishop of Lysmore, and Legate of all Ireland.

Anno 1144. *William*, Bishop of Winchester, by authority of Pope *Celestine* 2. in a Councell held at London, brought in the use of cursing with Bell, Booke, and Candle, which liked the Irish Priests well, to terrifie the Laytie for their Tithes. *Foxe.*

Anno 1148. there fell great variance betweene *Owen*, surnamed *Gwyneth*, Prince of North Wales, and *Cadwallader* his brother, they were both the sonnes of *Griffith ap Conan*, Prince of North Wales. This *Cadwallader* fled into Ireland, and hired to his aide, *Octer Mac Octer Curbell Mac Therulfe*, with a great number of Irish men, and red shankes, for 2000. markes, and landed at Abermeany in Carnarvonshire, against whom, Prince *Owen* came with great power, but before the Armies met, there was a peace concluded betweene the brethren, which when the Irish men

understood, they kept with them *Cadwallader*, as prisoner, for their pay formerly promised, so that hee was faine to deliver 2000. heads of Cattell, besides many prisoners and spoyles that were taken in the country; but Prince *Owen* as soone as he knew his brother to be set at liberty, set upon the Irish men (his stomacke was full of revengement) slue a great number of them, and recovered all the Cattell, with the prisoners, and other spoyle, so that in the end, as many as escaped with life, returned to Ireland with sorrow, shame, and losse, and made no bost of their voyage; so writeth *Caradoc.*

The same yeere, *Anno* 1148. *Iohn Papire* a Priest Cardinall, together with *Christianus* Bishop of Lismore, the Popes Legate over the whole Land, being sent by *Eugenius*, came into Ireland. And in *Anno* 1151. saith *Mathew Paris*, but by the consent of most Writers, *Anno* 1152. summoned a Councell, where in the presence of the Bishops, Abbots, Kings, Dukes, & the Antients of Ireland, by the Apostolike authoritie, Colledge of Cardinals, & consent of the Bishops, Abbots, & others there present, they ordained foure Archbishopricks in Ireland, and gave them foure pales, to wit, Ardmach, Dublin, Cashell, and Tuam. In Ardmach, then sate *Gelasius*, in Dublin *Gregory*, in Cashell *Donatus*, in Tuam *Edanus;* these were the first Archbishops of Ireland. The records from that time to this day, of the foure Provinces, the foure Archbishoprickes with their Bishops and Suffragans, in La-

tine, and vulgar speech, with their titles of Saints and Patrons, together with the unions of them in processe of time following, I finde thus,

Anno 1151. these Abbies were founded, *de Beatitudine, de duillio, de Magio, de valle salutis,* and happily the Monasterie which *Mathew Paris* and *Polychronicon* spake of upon this occasion. There was a Knight (say they) called *Owin,* of Irish birth, which had long served King *Stephen* in his warres, got licence to repaire unto his native soile, and to visit his friends; when hee came to Ireland, hearing the fame of *the Purgatory of the second Patricke the Abbot, and not the Bishop,* so I reade in *Polychronicon,* it came in his minde to visit the same, he being in the Cave, and concavities under ground, saw strange sights, and making report thereof unto King *Stephen,* obtained licence of him thenceforth to leade a religious and solitary life: he obtained also of King *Stephen,* (so *Mathew Paris* writeth) a parcell of ground in Ireland to build a Monasterie called Luden, an Abbey of white Monkes, where *Gervasius* became the first Abbot, and where *Gilbert* a Monke trayned up *Owen* in the order thereof. This *Gilbert* (saith mine Author) wrote as *Owen* told him all the reports that are now extant of that Purgatory, so that it seemes to be no antient matter, but a late device, first found by this *Owen,* in the late dayes of King *Stephen.*

Anno 1152. was the battaile of Monad-more fought

in Ireland, betweene Leinster and Mounster men, where (saith *Holinshed*) the flower and chiefest personages of Leinster and Mounster were slaine, and saith *Iohn Plunket*, Mounster lost the field, *Anno* 1154. *Terdielach*, King of Connaght dyed, there succeeded him, *Rorie Oconochor Rowag*, commonly called *Roderic*, who slue his owne brother that aspired to the kingdome of Connaght, and in this successe, attempted further, and became Monarch of Ireland.

Henry 2 King of England, the sonne of *Mathilda* the Empresse, subdued Scotland, Ireland, Orchades, and the furthest Ocean Ilands; hee was Protector of France, and was offered the kingdome of Ierusalem: this Noble *Henry* was crowned King of England, *Anno* 1154. he married *Elenor*, daughter and heire of *William*, Duke of Aquitaine, the which *Elenor* had been formerly married to *Lewis*, King of France, and upon dislike, divorced, under pretence that they were within the fourth degree of consanguinity: he was knighted by *David*, King of Scots, and after many broyles, & much bloudshed, adopted by King *Stephen* for his sonne, and consequently proclaimed heire apparant to the Crowne of England, and thereupon after the discease of *Stephen*, crowned with great ioy and applausse of the people

Anno 1154. the same yeere that *Henry* the second was crowned, the Abbey of Kyrie-eleeson was founded.

Anno 1155. saith *Mathew Paris* and *Fabian*, and the first or second of *Henry* 2. raigne, (though *Stow* referre it to the 7.) and *Anno* 1160. the King cast in his minde to conquer Ireland, hee saw that it was commodious for him, and considered that they were but a rude and savage people, for so the historiographers doe write, whereupon in his ambitious minde, he sent unto *Adrian*, Bishop of Rome, one *Iohn Salsbury*, (who by the said Bishop afterwards was made Bishop of Carnolum in France) with others, delivering his sute to that effect. *Adrian* being a Man of English birth, heard his Ambassadors the more willingly, considered the matter advisedly, together with his colledge of Cardinals, and granted him his request, as followeth: 'A-'drian the Bishop, the servant of the servants of God, 'to his most deer sonne in Christ, the Noble King of 'England, sendeth greeting and Apostolike benedic-'tion: your magnificence hath beene very carefull and 'studious how you might enlarge the Church of God 'here in earth, and increase the number of his Saints 'and elect in heaven, in that as a good Catholike King, 'you have and doe by all meanes labour and travell to 'enlarge and increase Gods Church, by teaching the 'ignorant people the true and Christian religion, and 'in abolishing and rooting up the weedes of sinne and 'wickednesse. And wherein you have, and doe crave 'for your better furtherance, the helpe of the Aposto-'like See (wherein more speedily and discreetly you 'proceed) the better successe we hope, God will send, 'for all they which of a fervent zeale and love in re-

'ligion, doe begin and enterprise any such thing, shall 'no doubt in the end, have a good and prosperous suc-'cesse: And as for Ireland, and all other Ilands where 'Christ is knowne, and the Christian religion received, 'it is out of all doubt, and your excellencie well know-'eth, they doe all appertaine and belong to the right 'of Saint *Peter*, and of the Church of Rome, and we 'are so much the more ready, desirous and willing to 'sow the acceptable seede of Gods word, because we 'know the same in the latter day will be most severely 'required at our hands: you have (our welbeloved 'sonne in Christ) advertised and signified unto us, 'that you will enter into the Land and Realme of Ire-'land, to the end to bring them to obedience unto Law, 'and under your subjection, and to root out from among 'them, their foule sinnes and wickednesse, as also to 'yeeld and pay yeerely out of every house, a yeerely 'pension of one penny to Saint *Peter*, and besides 'also will defend and keepe the rites of those Churches, 'whole and inviolate: We therefore well allowing and 'favouring this your godly disposition, and commend-'able affection, doe accept, ratifie, and assent unto this 'your petition; and doe grant that you (for the dilat-'ing of Gods Church, the punishment of sinne, the 'reforming of manners, planting of vertue, and the 'increasing of Christian religion) doe enter to possesse 'that land, and thereto execute according to your wise-'dome, whatsoever shall be for the honour of God, 'and the safety of the Realme: and further also we 'doe strictly charge and require, that all the people of

'that land, doe with all humblenesse, dutifulnesse, and 'honour, receive and accept you as their Liege Lord 'and Soveraigne, reseruing and accepting the right of 'holy Church to be inviolably preserved: as also the 'yeerely pension of Peter pence out of every house, 'which we require to be truely answered to Saint *Peter*, 'and to the Church of Rome. If therefore you doe 'minde to bring your godly purpose to effect, indevour 'to travell to reforme the people to some better order 'and trade of life, and that also by your selfe, and by 'such others as you shall thinke meet, true, and ho- 'nest in their life, manners, and conversation, to the 'end the Church of God may be beautified, the 'true Christian religion sowed and planted, and all 'other things done, that by any meanes shall or may 'be to Gods honour, and salvation of mens soules, 'whereby you may in the end receive of Gods hands, 'the reward of everlasting life, and also in the meane 'time, and in this life, carry a glorious fame and an 'honourable report among all nations.' The King upon the receit hereof, was very glad, and let it lye dorment by him, untill better opportunity was offered, as hereafter shall appeare.

Anno 1166. *Moragh Mac Cocholan*, King of Ireland, called a great Councell at Dublin, gave battaile to the King of Leinster, and killed him, and shortly after was himselfe slaine by *Ororic*, which succeeded in the soveraignty; the same yeere saith *Guttyn Owen* in his British Chronicle, *Henry* 2. being at Chester,

hired many shippes out of Ireland for his ayde, against North-Wales, but hee discharged them immediately, for his purpose tooke no good effect, in as much as the present troubles of Normandy called him away. In this pastime (so the old English delivereth) or rather the hurly-burly of the world, amids the warres of France, Flanders, and England; Ireland was all in armes, the occasion was as followeth.

* *Dermot Mac Morough Lageniæ Rex diuturno prosequebatur amore uxorem Domini O'Rourke Midiæ regis, quem alii Mauricium, alii Mordichum appellárunt. Hanc Domino Melargluno ortam natura pulchram, fortuna Reginam, libidoque scortum fecerat. Codex, qui inscribitur Howthensis, de utroque ridicula admodum narrat, sed quæ, uter utri flagitio præmineat, in dubio relinquere videantur. Tradit enim iste libellus Regem O'Rorke annis esse provectum, Reginam autem ætate florentem, & libidini dèditam, Quare cùm Rex Venatione regressus esuriret, Illa per ludibrium poma ex obscœna corporis parte detracta ei comedenda obtulit; quorum cum fœtor nares ejus offenderet, ea tantum risit. At Rex demum uxoris flagitio comperto, occasionem vindictæ non distulit, sed venatum quasi profecturus duos ex ejus nutriciis secum assumpsit postridie, quorum testes exsectos crustulo pinsendos curavit, atque ita domum ad uxo-*

* *This passage has been translated from the original English, into another language, for reasons which our learned Readers will find no difficulty in appreciating.* EDITOR.

rem attulit, magnopere laudans escam. Quibus postquam Regina & pedissequa se ingurgitassent deliciis, ut vobis, inquit ille, arridet hic cibus? ita ut nihil melius, respondent; tum ille reponit. Hic quidem cibus est, qui, sive crudus, sive assatus, vobis maxime sapit. Qualis demum est, rogant? nutriciorum testiculi, respondet. Tum illa horrore correpta truces sustulit oculos, neque eum post hæc placido vultu aspicere sustinuit. *Ororic* her Lord and husband being in pursuit of kerne theeves and outlawes that had mightily annoyed his people in the furthest part of his country, she with all celerity, supposing it a fit time, sent for her lover *Dermotte*, the message was no sooner delivered, but hee was a horse backe, posting to the Harlot; to be short, he tooke her away with him, at which time (O false heart) she strugled, she cryed, as though she were unwilling, and that hee forced her. *Ororic* immediately heard of it, gathered his forces together, mustred his people, craved ayde, and among others, wrote unto *Roderick*, Monarch of Ireland as followeth.

"Though I am not ignorant, (most renowned Prince) that humane causes are to be weighed in the balance of patience, and that a man endued with vertue, will not effeminate himselfe by reason of the unconstant and mutable minde of a Harlot, yet in so much this horrible crime, (whereof I am fully perswaded) came to your eares before my messenger could deliver his letters, a thing heretofore not heard of, as farre as I

remember, not practised against any King of Ireland; severity causeth me to call for justice, when charity admonisheth me not to seeke revengement. If thou behold the shame, I confesse it redoundeth to me alone; if you weigh the cause, it is common to us both; what confidence shall we repose in our subjects that are bound unto us in regard of our Princely command, if this effeminate adulterer, or rather queller of chastity, shall escape unpunished for so abhominable a fact? for the unchastised offences of Princes, notoriously committed in the sight of al men, breed a most pernitious imitation, as precedents unto the people; in summe you have sufficient experience of my good will and affection towards you, you see mee wounded with the cruell darts of fortune, vexed with infinite discommodities, and now extremely driven to my utter shifts: It remaines, (seeing I am wholly yours) that not onely with counsell, being requested, but with armes, being urged, you revenge my quarrell: this when you will, and as you will, not onely I aske, but require at your hands. Farewell."

The Monarch for some former quarrell against *Dermot* was all on fire, and joyning forces with *Ororic*, entred Leinster with fire and sword, the people cry woe and alacke *(O bone in Irish)* now are wee punished for the lewdnesse of our Prince. *Dermot* lulling himselfe in his lovers armes, heareth the newes, starteth upon a sodaine, beholdeth his Lady, hath no power to speake, runneth forth, calleth his men, cry-

eth for aid, throughout his country, none gave eare unto him; the country thought now (whereas they could not) that God will be revenged on him for his exactions, cruelty, tyranny, and all other villanies practised upon his subjects, and especially for deflouring another mans wife: when he saw himselfe quite forsaken, voyd and destitute of all ayde, he betooke himselfe to the sea, and fled for England, but what became of the Harlot I cannot learne; belike shee hanged her selfe when she had set all the country in uprore. *Anno* 1169. (*Iohn Clin* and *Iohn Stow* are mine Authors) now that *Dermot* is fled, I am to insert a story out of the British Chronicles of Conwey and Strotflur Abbeyes, afore I discourse of him which was in the same yeere, that he tooke the sea, how that *Owen Gwyneth*, Prince of North-Wales, had a sonne called *Ryryd*, who in the right of his wife, as it seemeth, was Lord of Clochran in Ireland, and another sonne begotten vpon an Irish woman, called *Howell*, and a third sonne called *Madoc*. This *Madoc* finding his country in great contention, and his brethren at civill warres, prepared certaine ships with men and munition out of Wales and Ireland, and sought adventures by seas, he sailed west from the coast of Ireland, so farre north, that hee came to a land unknowne, where he saw many strange things. This land in the opinion of *Humphrey Lloyde*, the great Antiquary of Britaine, must needs be some part of that country, of which the Spaniards affirme themselves to be the first discoverers since *Hannos* time.

For by reason and order of cosmographie, this land to the which *Madoc* came, must needs be sonne part of Nova-hispania, or Florida; whereupon it is manifest that the same country was long before discovered by Britaines and Irish men, afore either *Columbus* or *Americus Vespatius*, led any Spaniards thither. Of the voyage and returne of this *Madoc*, there be many fables, the which I will not report. He prepared ships for a second voyage, and tooke with him men and women to inhabit that land, therefore it is to be presupposed that he and his people inhabited part of those countries, for it appeareth by *Francis Loves*, that in Acusanus and other places, the people honoured the Crosse, whereby it may be gathered, that Christians had been there before the comming of the Spaniards: but because this people were not many, they followed the manners of the land, and used their language. I am of opinion with others, that the land whereunto *Madoc* came, was some part of Mexico; first of all, for that the inhabitants of that land report, their Rulers to have descended from a strange nation that came from a far country, which thing is confessed by *Mutesuma*, King of that country, in his orations made for quieting of his people at his submission to the King of Castile, *Hernando Curtecius* being then present, which is laid downe in the Spanish Chronicles, of the conquest of the West-Indies; secondly the british words and names of places used in that country to this day, doe argue the same, as when they talke together, (they say) *Gwrando*, which is *hearken*

or *listen* in British. Also if you peruse Sir *Humphrey Gilberts* discovery, they have a Bird, which they call Pengwin in Brittish and Cornish, a white-head, but the Iland of Corroeso, the Cape of Britaine, the river of Gwyndoor and the white rocke of Pengwyn, be British or Welch words: whereby it appeareth, that it was that country which *Madoc* and his people inhabited: now remembring my selfe that my pen hath not carryed me so far unto forraigne countries by sea, but that I expect *Dermots* returne by sea and by land into Ireland. *Dermot Mac Morogh* came to *Henry* 2. in Normandie, made his moane (as formerly in substance is delivered) craved aide for his restitution into his country, being a King exiled, although distressed and void of comfort, unlesse hee might obtaine it at his Majesties hands; the Kings hands being full of warres, he granted him his favourable letters as followeth.

'*Henry*, King of England, Duke of Normandie 'and Aquitaine, Earle of Anjow, &c. unto all his 'subiects, English, Normans, Welch, and Scots, and 'to all nations and people being his subiects, greet-'ing; whereas *Dermot* Prince of Leinster most wrong-'fully (as he enformeth) banished out of his owne 'country, hath craved our ayde, therefore for so much 'as we have received him unto our protection, grace 'and favour, whosoever within our Realmes, subiects 'unto our command, will ayde and helpe him whom 'wee have embraced as our trustie friend, for the

'recovery of his land, let him be assured of our favour 'and licence in that behalfe.'

Dermot returned ioyfully with these letters, and came to Bristoll, where at that time, *Richard*, surnamed *Strangbow*, Earle of Penbroke and Chepstow lay, hee shewed his letters, caused them at severall times, publikely to be read, conferred with Earle *Richard*, and concluded to give the Earle his sole daughter and heire in marriage, and his whole interest in the kingdome of Leinster after his decease. *Richard* undertooke of the other side to effect all his desire. As *Dermot* wayted for a winde, it came in his minde for the shorter cut into Ireland, to goe by land into Saint *Davids*, where he was refreshed, and greatly pittied by the Bishop there, and concluded in like sort (as with the Earle before) with *Robert fitz Stephens*, and *Moris Fitz Gerald*, by the mediation of the good Bishop there, to restore him unto his kingdome, upon condition that hee should give them and theirs for ever, the towne of Wexford, and two cantreds of land next adjoyning; upon this hee tooke shipping, secretly came to Fernes, and lived privately among the Clergie all that winter, expecting performance of promises out of England. *Anno* 1170. *Abbatia de Castro Dei*, was founded in the same yeere, and the first day of May, (so writeth *Stow*) *Robert Fitz Stephens*, with *David Barrie*, and *Hervie de Monte*, *Mariscospie* of *Strangbow* his nephew, according to his promise, with thirty Knights, threescore Esquires

well mounted, and three hundred foot, being Archers well appointed, of his owne kindred, and trayning up in feates of armes, and the choice souldiers of all Wales, landed at the Bann, not farre from Wexford; hereupon the rime runneth.

At the Creeke of Bagganbun,
Ireland was lost and wonne.

° Here some allude unto the blinde Prophecie of *Merlin*, that hee should meane this noble Warrior and worthy Knight, where he saith; ' A Knight biparted ' shall first enter with force of Armes, and breake the ' bounds of Ireland:' this they would have understood of *Robert Fitz Stephens*, an English man, borne in Normandie, and of *Nesta* his mother, daughter to *Rees ap Tuyder* Prince of South-Wales; so I finde in *Cambrensis;* but if *Merlin* had foresight in this, I had rather take his Prophecie verified in respect of his Armes and Ensignes, which were biparted, being of two sundry changes, namely, *party par pale gules and ermine, a saltier counterchanged;* for commonly all Prophecies have their allusions unto Armes, and by them they are discovered, though at the first not so apparant, before the event thereof take place.

The next day after, in the same place, landed *Morice Prendergast*, whom *Stanihurst* calleth *Prendelgast de Rofensi Walliæ Demetiæ Provinciâ*, as *Cambrensis* writeth; the which I take to be about Mil-

ford in South-Wales, accompanied with ten Knights, and a great number of Archers in most gallant sort in two ships. Immediately, *Robert Fitz Stephens* directeth his letters to *Dermot*, who could scarce reade them for joy of their arrivall, and sent forthwith his base sonne *Donald* with five hundred men to salute them, and hasteneth after himselfe with all speed; off goeth his poore mantle wherein hee obscurely shrowded himselfe, on goeth his princely attire, the Irish men follow him, the fame thereof is spread over the whole land: such as before in his distressed state flatly forsooke him, now runne and flatter, and fawne upon him; to be short, they meete, they confirme the former leagues with oathes, and ioyne forces together, and they march towards Wexford, to lay siege to the towne; the townesmen a fierce & wilfull people, (to the number of 2000.) sally forth with full purpose to give them battaile in the field, but when they heard the Trumpets sound, the horses neyghing, and beheld their glittering Armes, the ratling of their furniture, horse and men in compleat Armes, and all most comely in battaile array, (the like of them not formerly seene, neither heard of) they alter their mindes, they retire into the towne, they make fast their gates, and fire the suburbs. *Fitz Stephens* came to the wals, filled the trenches with armed men, and appointed his Archers to levell at the wals and turrets, if occasion were offered: the townesmen manfully defended themselves, threw over the wals great stones and pieces of timber, hurt many, and made them voyd the place,

among whom, a couragious Knight, called *David Barrye*, adventured to scale the walles, but with a great stone which fell upon his head-piece, he was cast downe to the ditch, and carried away by his fellowes with safeguard of his life, upon this they goe to the sea strand, and fired all the ships and vessels which they found there.

The next day after, upon better advice and deliberation, they approach unto the wals, and gave a new assault, the townesmen within beganne to distrust their state, being upon this sudden arrivall of the strangers, not sufficiently provided of men, munition, and victuals, to encounter with them, and remembring againe, how most unnaturally they had rebelled against their Prince and Soveraigne, they sent messengers to *Dermot*, to intreate for peace, (alas it was farre from the heart) the which was granted, and tooke of them pledges and hostages for the performance thereof. Lastly, *Mac Moragh*, according to his former promise gratified these first adventures, hee gave unto *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and *Morrice Fitz Gerrald*, who was as yet in England, the towne of Wexford, and the territories thereunto adioyning, and unto *Hervie de Monte Morisco*, two cantreds on the sea side, betwixt Wexford and Waterford.

Dermot Mac Moroch and his company now take heart, they encrease their Army with Wexford men, and become 3000. strong. The next iourney they

bend their course towards Ossory, where one *Donald*, or *Mac Donell* was Prince, whom *Dermot* hated deadly, and for this cause *Donald* suspected *Dermots* sonne and heire to have much familiaritie with his wife, and therefore in his jealous humour, apprehended him, imprisoned him, and pulled out both his eyes, (but say they) though sight failed him, his feeling did not, for she loved him the more, in so much that she satisfied his lust, and ranne away after him. When *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and the Gallants of Britaine entred the country, they found neither dastards, nor cowards, but valiant men with horse and foot; they found the country fast with woods, bogges, and paces trenched and plashed; yet the valour of the adventurers was such, presuming upon former fortunes, to have the like future successes, with loose wings drove them out of the woods and bogges, into the plaine and champion land, where the horsemen with their speares overthrew them, and the foote finding them groveling, runne them thorow, and ended their dayes; the Gallowglasses followed, and cut off their heads.··And here *Dermot Mac Morogh* is mightily condemned, he being originally for exaction, extortion, cruelty, tyranny, and other damnable offences, iustly exiled, now sheweth no Princely stomacke, but a base Wolvish minde; for when 300. of the Ossory mens heads were throwne at his feete, (alas they had not offended) hee viewed them all, and finding one whom he knew, and mortally hated, he held him by the head and eares, and most brutishly with his teeth, bit the nose and

lips of the dead, whom without the ayde of the Britaines, hee durst not behold in the face. In this bloudy course, *Dermot* directed these worthy warriours, they more affecting the prey for their present maintenance, then the bloud of any person, to spoyle, burne, waste the country, and murther the poore and seely people, which God wot, meant no harme: whereupon *Donald*, Prince of Ossory, despising *Dermot Mac Morogh*, by the advice of his Councell and friends, sent to *Robert Fitz Stephens* in writing as followeth: Sir Knight of Noble race, renowned for martiall prowesse, *Donald* Prince of Ossory sendeth greeting: *Dermot* that damnable adulterer in his owne person, with the King of Meths wife, and in his sonnes person with my wife, have drawne thee and those Gallants, (most worthy Knights) into this poore country and naked people: I will yeeld my selfe (it is for the good of my poore followers) into thy hands, peace I crave, and peace let me have. *Robert Fitz Stephens* acquainted *Dermot Mac Morogh* with the premises of all sides, the Irish dissembled, (as hereafter shall further appeare) peace they granted, and they acknowledged *Dermot* for their Lord and Soveraigne. In all this service, I may not conceale what *Cambrensis* delivereth. *David Barry* and *Meilerius*, effected singular exployts, and deserved no lesse commendations. As soone as the good successe of *Dermot* and the strangers lately arrived, was spread abroad, *Rory Oconochor, alias Rodericke*, King of Connaught, Monarch of Ireland called the Princes

and Nobles of the land together, and layeth before them the dangerous estate and imminent perill of the whole land, how *Dermot* guilefully had trayned in strangers, how hee and the strangers were like to ouer-runne all, unlesse with all expedition, this mischiefe were prevented; in summe they concluded, that every man shall to his Armes, and make ready horse and foot, and set upon these invaders.

Dermot Mac Morogh, having certaine knowledge of this great separation and mischiefe intended, and his false harted subjects, that lately fawned vpon him were fled to the enemies, fearing the puisance of the Monarch, and the forces of the whole land, called *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and said vnto him; 'Fortune 'is fickle, our state is an ague that commeth by fits, 'my friends fleet away, and argue false hearts, no 'marvaile though I bee disquieted, if you stick not to 'mee I am undone:' *Robert Fitz Stephens* replied, 'Wee have left behind us our deare friends and our 'native soyle, wee have fired all our shippes, not upon 'intent to runne away, wee haue already in armes in-'gaged our lives, fall out as fall out may, wee will 'live and dye together, bee you true to us, wee will 'not bee false to you:' *Dermot* hereupon gathering his spirits together, got him and his followers to a certaine fastenesse, not farre from Fernes, where hee intrenched and plashed himselfe, being invironed with woods, hils, rockes, bogges and waters, a place to mans seeming inaccessible and invincible, to endure

for a while wandring clowds, and threatning stormes of his adversaries, to vanish and bee caried away with waving winds of fortune and unfortunate warres: Whose foresight and ready wit *Robert Fitz Stephens* highly commended, Immediately there came a Messenger from *Roderic* the Monarch unto *Robert Fitz Stephens* with this message: 'The Britans may not 'by the Lawes of Armes, display their Banners and 'Ensignes in forreine possessions, and dispose the 'lawfull heires of their inheritance, but they are with 'licence of the Irish to pack home whence they came: 'It is a blemish for the Brittish nation, iniuriously to 'giue aide to a shamefull fact, neither may the lechery 'of *Dermot*, be mantled under British cloaks, where-'fore depart and forsake him that is forsaken of God 'and man. And here by my messenger receive to 'defray your charges, and transport you to your na-'tive soyle.' *Robert Fitz Stephens* answereth, 'your 'present I will not accept, faith and troth I have 'pawned to my friend *Dermot*, I will not breake: hee 'forsakes not me, I will not forsake him, neither leave 'him distressed; you speake of lechery, what is that 'among martiall men? I heare you have Bastards 'your selfe, to what end is your embassie? If *Rode-'rick* give councell, we need it not; if he Prophecie, 'we credit not his oracle; if he command as a Prince, 'we obey not his autority; if hee threaten as an 'enemie, a figge for his Monarchy.' The messenger returned with small welcome, going and comming; *Roderic* bethought himselfe againe, and sent letters

to *Dermot*, perswading him to be at peace with his country people, and to banish the strangers out of the Land; he rejected his councell and despiseth the messenger: *Roderic* seeing that his private practises tooke small effect, put himselfe in armes, assembleth his forces, and delivereth unto them these speeches: 'You 'right worthy and valiant defenders of your Country 'and liberty; Consider with what people and for 'what cause wee are now to fight and wage battell, 'the enemy of his owne Country, the tyrant over his 'owne people, the exile fugitive, behold hee is re-'turned backed with strangers, and purposeth to de-'stroy us and the whole Nation; hee being an enemy, 'hath brought in those enemies, which have beene 'ever hatefull unto us all, and are most greedy to 'have the Soveraignty and Dominion over us all, pro-'testing openly and firmely avouching, that by fatall 'destiny they are to bee Commanders over this land. 'And so farre hath he poured out his venome, that 'there is no favour, nor mercy to be looked for at his 'hands. O cruell beast, (yea more cruell then ever 'was beast) who lately bit with his owne teeth, the 'nose and lips of the dead: he to satisfie his insatiable 'malice and bloudy minde, spareth neither man, wo-'man, nor childe: he deserveth well to be hated of 'all, that opposeth himselfe an enemy to all; where-'fore my loving and deere country men, be well ad-'vised, looke about you, and consider advisedly, how 'by the like meanes, (I meane civill warres) all 'Realmes and nations for the most part have beene

'overthrowne and brought to utter ruine. *Iulius* 'Cæsar attempted the invasion of Britaine, was twice 'foyled, and indured the repulse, but when *Androgeus* Duke of London fell at variance with the King, 'to be reveriged, sent for *Iulius*, who thereupon re-'turning, subdued the land. The Britaines being at 'discord, and hating their vicious King *Careticus*, the 'Saxons finding opportunitie to over runne all, sent 'for *Gurmundus* the arch-Pirate and terror of the 'Ocean seas, who ioyning forces together, foyled the 'Britaines, and banished their King: not long after, '*Isembert* aspiring to the Crowne of France, procured 'the said *Gurmund* to his ayde: behold the end, '*Gurmund* was slaine, *Isembert* overthrowne, and his 'whole practise came to nought. Wherefore let us 'with one minde, like those valiant Frenchmen in our 'rightfull cause, in the defence of our country, and 'safeguard of the lives of our wives and children, cou-'ragiously give the onset upon our enemies. And 'whiles these strangers are but few in number, let us 'stoutly issue out upon them. The fire while it is 'but in embers and sparkles, may easily be covered 'with ashes, but if it breake into flames, it is hard to 'be quenched: wherefore it is expedient we stoppe 'beginnings, and prevent sicknesse when it creepeth 'least; when it takes roote, it will hardly be cured: 'wherefore cheere my hearts, wee fight for our coun-'try and liberty, let us leave unto our posterity an im-'mortall fame, let us march on, and lustily assault 'them, that the overthrow of a few, may be a terrour

'to many, and that it may be a president unto all for-
'raigne Potentates, never to attempt the like againe.'

Dermot Mac Morogh and his men receive intelligence of this march, and the approach of the enemy, and beholding his men, somewhat dismaid, turned him to them with loving countenance: yee men of Leynster, my naturall subjects, of my flesh and bloud, whom loyalty, truth and kindred hath hitherto lincked together; let us live together, and dye together, in the defence of our persons and country; you see how that wicked and ambitious minded *Rodericke*, the Author of many mischiefes, not contented with his owne country and kingdome, seeketh now the soveraignty and dominion over the whole land, the which, I hope, God will not permit. You see his glory, his pride, and audacious attempts, how he lifteth up his head, and looketh aloft: he trusteth to his multitude, doubt you not but that God is on our side, and the rightfull cause ours, though wee of country birth, to you Leinster men I speake, bee not so many as they are, neither so well appointed, it forceth not, for victory is not measured by multitude, but by valour and courage, and oftentimes, wee know, that a few stout and hardy men have foiled troupes of sluggards, dastards and white liverd Souldiers: If you mistrust any defect in your selves, behold a present supply at your back and elbow.

'Doe not you see these Worthy Knights, these

'Valiant Warriers these Noble gallants, the flowre of 'Brittaine? their valour in part you have sufficiently 'tryed, their furniture excelleth, their order and aray 'is most comely, they have forsaken their native soyle, 'their friends and kindred, and all for our sakes; will 'they fly? no, they have burned their Ships, the Land 'will yeeld them neither succour nor refuge, neither 'will the bloody tyrant *Roderic* shew any mercy; wee 'are sworne the one to the other, while breath lasteth 'and life endureth. If the enemy pretend with the 'sword to chastise us for our sinnes, as it appeareth 'by their slaunderous & shamelesse reports; alas, 'what have you done? God knoweth, your consciences 'are cleare, your cause honest, to take Armes in de-'fence of your Prince, and Countrey? Why doe they 'not behold the blemishes, nay the hainous enormities 'and villanies that raigne among them? Their car-'rows, their kerne, their theeves, their murders, their 'swearing, their lying, their drunkennesse, their 'whordome and bloody minds who reformeth? The 'Tyrant *Roderic* hath murdered his owne naturall 'brother, hee hath three wives alive, he hath eleven 'bastards by severall women: O villaine, to behold a 'mote in our eye, and cannot see a beame in his owne. 'If the tyrant make challenge and pretend title to 'Leinster, because the same hath sometimes beene 'tributarie to some one King of Connoght; by the 'same reason also may wee demand and challenge all 'Connoght; for our ancestors have beene sole Gover-'nours of both, and Monarchs of all Ireland. The

'Lawes of all Nations doe permit, and allow to resist 'and withstand force and injury, with force and 'strength; Let us be of good courage, wee stand vpon 'a good ground, our seat is naturally very strong of it 'selfe, & now by our industry made more defensive; 'feare nothing, quit yourselves like men.' When *Dermot* had made an end of his Irish Oration, *Robert Fitz Stephens* in the Brittish tongue turneth him to the Brittaines. 'You my companions in mar-'tiall affaires, you lusty young gallants that have 'endured with me many perils, yet still retaine your 'noble and valiant courage; consider whence wee 'came, what wee are, and the cause we have in hand; 'we are lineally descended from Troy, whose fame 'hath filled the whole earth, and now lately some of 'us out of Normandy, have seated our selves in Brit-'taine, and have to our wives, children, and kindred 'of the ancient and noble Brittish race; of the one 'we cary our valiant and noble mind, of the other wee 'learned the experience in feates of Armes; wee are 'not come hither as pirats and theeves, to robbe and 'spoile (as it is well knowne unto you) wee had our 'native soile to inhabit, wee had our kindred about us, 'and the countenance of great persons, wee came after 'the course of the World, as Marshall men (but in 'an honest cause) to take our adventures. Heere wee 'are, our friends are with us, our foes are in armes 'against us, wee are well appointed, the enemy is but 'a wilde, naked, rascall and savage people: feare 'nothing, our cause is good; *Dermot* sought us, we

'sought not him, hee loveth our nation, and our friends 'in former times have found friendship in his Countrey, 'hee is a Prince lately exiled, whose fall is more to be 'pittied then envied; we are to comfort him, to aide 'him, and to restore him to his Kingdome. It is more 'honorable to make then to be a King, and to restore 'then to exile: he is a Prince of a bountifull mind, 'hee hath promised large for us and our heires after 'us, hee hath in part already most faithfully perform-'ed, his yeeres are many, and his daies are but few; 'after him wee shall enjoie his, and if we overcome 'the enemy, wee shall possesse all: feare not death; 'it is but a short delay betweene transitory and eter-'nall life, it is but a short passage from vaine and tem-'porall delights, to certaine and perpetuall joies, if we 'conquer here, wee shall inherit here, and purchase 'unto us immortall fame; if we misse here, we are 'sure of a Kingdome in another world.' *Roderic* considering with himselfe, the events of warres how doubtfull and uncertaine they are, wrought all meanes to intreat for peace, being timerous to adventure battaile with strangers, whose force hee mightily feared, and whose puissance and valour being renowned, he was loth to encounter withall; he sent messengers unto *Dermot Mac Morogh*, promising him that hee and his heires should in peace and quiethesse enjoy all Leinster, and acknowledge him for his chiefe King and Monarch, and to yeeld unto him the service and homage that to that belonged; and that he should deliver him his sonne *Cunthurus* (*Cnothurinus* saith *Sta-*

nyhurst) for pledge and hostage. And if the peace were truly kept and performed, *Roderic* promised to give him his daughter in marriage, and in the end when Leinster should bee quitly setled and reduced to the old Irish order, *Dermot* should drive away the Brittans and strangers, and procure no more into the Land; all this was concluded vpon, and solemnely undertaken by oathes on both sides, yet all was but flat dissimulation. In the nock of this, landeth at Wexford *Maurice Fitz Girald*, brother to *Robert Fitz Stephens* by the mothers side, in two ships, having in his company, tenne Knights, thirty horsemen, archers and foot a hundred, whereof *Dermot* was very glad and mightily encouraged on everie side. And immediately tooke with him *Morice Fitz Girald*, and bent his forces towards *Dublin*, to be revenged on them, for many wrongs, and especially for the death of his father, whom they murthered in their Councell house, as formerly hath beene delivered, and after for more despite buried him with a Dog: They left *Robert Fitz Stephens* behind busily imployed in building of a Fort or a strong hold some two miles from Wexford, in British and Irish called the Carricke. As they drew neere Dublin, they preyed, they spoyled, they burned all before them. Dublin trembled for feare, the townesmen intreated for peace, the which was granted upon the delivery of certaine pledges and hostages:

In the meane while, no small stirre arose betweene *Roderic* the Monarch, and *Donald*, Prince of Lime-

rike for chiefery. Whereupon there arose deadly hatred and martiall warres. *Roderic* drew all his forces against him; *Dermot Mac Moroogh* sent to *Robert Fitz Stephens*, that in all haste he should draw forces to the ayde of *Donald* Prince of Limirike his sonne in law, which was accordingly affected, where *Roderic* was foyled, lost his chiefery, and with shame enough returned to his own country. Now *Dermot Mac Morogh* is puffed up with these prosperous successes, and whereas a while agoe, he would have contented himselfe with Leynster alone, now Connaght and all Ireland seeme little enough unto his aspiring minde. Secretly hee acquainteth *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and *Maurice Fitz Gerald* with his purpose, and offereth any of them his daughter and heire with his inheritance after, upon condition, that they should send for supplies of their kindred and country men, to effect his enterprises; they modestly thanked him for his offers, and refused his daughter, for that they were both already married, and withall wished him to write for *Richard Strangbow*, with whom he had formerly concluded to that effect, unto whom he addresseth his messenger, and directeth his letters in this forme:

Dermot Mac Morogh, Prince of Leinster, to *Richard* Earle of Chepstow, the sonne of Earle *Gilbert*, sendeth greeting. 'If you doe well consider the time of 'men and matters, as we doe which are distressed, 'then would you regard whether we have cause to 'complaine of men, or to maligne and curse the infor-

'tunate time. Even as the seely Storkes and Swal-
'lowes with their comming, prognosticate the summer
'season, and with westerly windes are blowne away:
'we have observed times and seasons fit for your arri-
'vall and transportation, if your affaires had corres-
'pondently accorded unto our expectations. East and
'West no doubt would have fitted our purpose, but
'hitherto being frustrated of your long desired pre-
'sence and promises, unlesse the most valiant Knights
'of your country birth, (whose valour and prowesse
'my penne is not able to paint unto the posterity) had
'upheld our state and dignity. We beseech you a-
'gaine and againe, in the league and amitie of Prin-
'ces, not to use further delayes; our successe hitherto
'hath beene to our hearts desire. Leynster is our
'owne, your comming will inlarge our bounds, the
'speedier it is, the more gratefull; the hastier, the
'more joyfull; the sooner, the better welcome.'
Richard Strangbow was pleased with these letters, glad of the successe of *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and cast with himselfe, how hee might speedily passe for Ireland. He repaired to King *Henry* 2. humbly beseeching him, either to restore him to such possessions, as by right of inheritance did belong unto him, or to give him Passe to seek adventures in some forraigne country, and among some strange nation. *Stanihurst* excellently conceited, layeth downe the Kings answer: *Henry*, smiling within himselfe, saith, 'Loe, whether 'and where thou wilt goe and wander for me, it shall 'be lawfull for thee, take *Dedalus* wings and flye

'away.' *Strangbow* betweene ieast and earnest, takes this for a sufficient licence, and makes ready for Ireland, and sends before him, *Reimond Le Grosse*, nephew to *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and *Morice Fitz Gerald*, sonne to *William Fitz Gerald*, the elder brother, which land at Dundorogh, commonly called Dundenold, West of Wexford, with tenne Knights, forty Esquires, and fourescore Archers and foot; whereupon *Omolaghlin Ophelin*, Lord of the Decies, raised the country, consulted with the townesmen of Waterford, and concluded that it stood them upon, with all expedition, to set upon the strangers; they made ready 3000. men by land, they runne up and downe the shore, they row; their song was kill, kill, kill, *Reimond* straight upon his arrivall, had fortified himselfe, the Waterfordians march against him in battaile array, the Britaines being but sixscore and ten, came forth to make good the field against 3000. *Reymond* perceiving in the skirmish that the enemy over-laid them, retired to his Fort, the Irish perswading themselves at that instant to give the Britaines an utter overthrow, thicke and thinne, with all haste pursued them, and the formost entring at the foote of the last Britaine into the Fort, had his head cloven in two with *Reymonds* sword, immediately saith *Reymond*, strike the drumme, follow mee fellow souldiers; the Irish being disordered, and out of battaile array, and discouraged with the death of one man, flie away; then they which in this doubtfull skirmish were like to be vanquished and quite overthrown, became victors,

conquerours, & wan the field; they chaysed the Waterfordians that were out of order, & at their wits ends, & slue of them, saith *Cambrensis*, above 500. persons, and being weary of killing, they cast a great number of those whom they had taken prisoners, headlong from the rocks, into the sea. In this service, Sir *William Ferand*, a Knight, deserved singular commendations, and was the onely man of all the Britaines, saith *Stanihurst* that was slaine: Thus fel the pride and rash attempt of Waterford, thus decayed their strength and force, and thus became the ruine and overthrow of that Citie, which, as it bred a great hope and consolation to the Britaines, so was it the cause of a great desperation and terrour to the enemy. They tooke 70. of the best men in Waterford prisoners, they enter into consultation, and call a martiall court, what was to be done with them. *Reymond* full of pittie and compassion, delivereth his opinion; *you my noble and valiant companions, and fellow souldiers*, for the increase of whose honour, vertue, and fortune, wee presently seeme to contend, let us consider what is best to bee done with these our prisoners and captives: for my part I doe not thinke it good, nor yet allow that any favour or curtesie should be at al shewed to the enemy, but understand you, these are no enemies now, but men; no rebels, but such as be vanquished and cleane overthrowne, and standing in defence of their conntry by evill fortune and hard destiny, are subdued; their adventures were honest, and their attempts commendable, and therefore they are not to be reputed for

theeves, factious persons, traitors, nor yet murtherers; they are now brought to that distresse and case, that rather mercy for example sake is to bee shewed, then cruelty to the increase of their misery to be ministred: surely our ancestors in times past, (although indeed it bee very hard to be done) were wont when fortune favoured, to temper their loose mindes, and qualifie their unruly affections, with some one discommoditie or other: wherefore let mercy and pitty, which is in man most commendable, worke so in us, that we that now have overcome others, may subdue our owne mindes, and conquer our owne affections. For modesty, moderation, and discretion, are wont to stay hasty motions, and to stoppe the course of rash devices. O how commendable and honourable is it to a Noble man, that in his greatest triumph and glory, he counteth it for a sufficient revenge, that hee can revenge, and be wreaked! *Iulius Cæsar*, whose conquests were such, his victory so great, and his triumphs so many, that the whole world was noysed therewith, he had not so many friends who reioyced for the same, but he had many more enemies that maligned and enuied his successes, not onely in slanderous words, and evill reports, but many also secretly conspired, devised and practised his death and destruction; And yet he was so full of pitty, mercy, and compassion, that he never commanded nor willed any to bee put to death for the same, saving onely one *Domitius*, whom he had of meere clemency for his lewdnesse before pardoned, for his wickednesse released, and for his treachery acquitted.

And thus as his pitty did much increase his honour, so did it nothing hinder his victories. Oh how beastly then and impious is that cruelty, wherein victory is not ioyned with pitty! for it is the part of a right Noble and Valiant Conquerour, to count them enemies, that doe wage the battaile, contend and fight for the victory, but such as be conquered, taken prisoners, and kept in bonds and captivitie, to take and repute them for men; that hereby fortitude and force may diminish the battell, and end the quarrell, as also humanitie may increase love, and make peace. It is therefore a great commendation, and more praise worthy to a noble man, in mercy to be bounteous, then in victory to be cruell. For the one onely lyeth in the course of fortune, but the other in vertue. And as it had beene a great increase of our victory, and an augmentation of honour, if our enemies had beene slaine in the field, and overthrowne in the battaile; so they being now taken and saved, as it were men returned from rebels to the common society, and fellowship of men. If wee now should kill them, it will bee to our great shame, dishonour and reproach for ever. And for as much as by the killing and destroying of them, wee shall bee never the neerer to have the command of the country, and never sooner to be Lords of the Land (and yet the ransoming of them very good for the maintenance of the Souldiers, the good fame of us, and the advancement of honour) wee must need thinke that it is better to ransome them, then cruelly to kill them; for as it is requisite, that a Souldier in the field fighting in armes,

should then thirst for the bloud of his enemy, trie the force of his sword, and valiantly stand to his tackle for victory; so when the fight is ended, the warres ceased, and the armour laid downe, and all strongnesse of hostility set apart, then in a Noble man must humanity take place, pitty and commiseration must be shewed, and all kindnesse of curtesie must be extended.

With this they were all drawen to some mildnesse and remorse, and ready to shew favour in hope of friendship againe. *Henry de Monte Marisco*, who came thither to salute *Reimond*, stands vp in opposition, bent to blood and villany, in whom there was neither manhood in battell abroad, nor mercy in consultation at home, and spake as followeth: *Reimond* hath very exquisitly discoursed of pitty and mercy in set speeches, uttering his eloquence hath shewed his mind, and declared his opinion, perswading and inducing us to beleeve that a strange land were to be conquered sooner by mercy and fond pittie, then by fire and sword; but I pray you, can there bee a worse way then to hold that course. Did *Iulius Cæsar* or *Alexander of Macedonia*, by such meanes or in such order conquer the whole world; did the Nations from out of all places runne to submit themselves under their command, and imperie in respect of their pitty and mercy, and not rather compelled so to doe for feare and per-force? For people whilst they are yet proud and rebellious, all pitty and mercy set apart, are by all manner of meanes and wayes to bee subdued:

but when they are once brought under subjection and bondage, & ready to serve and obey, then they are with all curtesie to be intreated and kindly dealt with-all, so that the state of the Government be in safety and void of dager, herein & in this point, must pitty be used; but in the other severity or rather cruelty is more necessary: here clemency is to be shewed, but in the other rigour without favour is to be ministred. *Reimond* perswadeth that mercy is to bee extended as upon people already subdued and subjected, or as though the enemies were so few and of so small a number, as against whom no valiant service nor chivalry can be exploited; and yet they are ready to joine with us, whereby our force may bee increased, and our power augmented: but alas, doe not we see, how that the whole notion and people of Ireland are fully bent and (not without cause) altogether conspired against us? surely me thinks *Reimond* is contrary to himselfe, for why? his coming hither was not to dispute of pitty nor to reason of mercy, but to conquer the nation, to subdue the people: Oh what an example of impious pitty were it then, to neglect our our owne safety, and to have remorse and compassion vpon others distresses! moreover wee have here in the field and in armour, more enemies then friends, we are in the middle of perils and dangers, our enemies being round about us in every corner: and shall wee thinke this to be nothing, but that we must bee also in the like distresse and danger among ourselves: Round about us our enemies are infinit, and within ourselves,

some there be which practise and work our destruction: And if it should happen that our Captives and Prisoners should escape, and breake loose out of their bonds, which are but very weake and slender, no doubt they would forthwith take our own armour and weapons against us; well, well, the Mouse is in the cubbord, the Fire is in the lappe, and the Serpent is in the bosome, the enemie is at hand ready to oppresse his adversarie, and the guest is in place with small curtesie to requite his host. If our enemies, when they come in good array, and well appointed to give the onset, and to wage battel against us; if they should happen to have the victorie, & the vpper hand over us, would they deal in pitty and mercy? would they grant us our lives? would they put us to ransome? Tush, what needs many words, when the deeds are apparent; our victory is to bee used, that the destruction of these few may bee a terror to many, whereby all others, and this wild and rebellious nation may take example, and bewar how they meddle and encounter with us; of two things we are to make choice of one, for either we must valiantly and couragiously stand to performe what we have taken in hand, and all fond pitty set aside, boldly and stoutly to overthrowe and vanquish this rebellious and stubborne people, or (if we shall after the mind and opinion of *Reimond* altogether be pittiful and full of mercy) we must hoise up our sailes, and returne home, leaving both the Country, and all that we have already gotten, to this miserable and wretched people. When *Herveie* had made an end of his speech,

they put it to voyces, and the voyces went on *Herveis* side; whereupon the Captaines (as men condemned) were brought to the Rockes, and after their Limbs were broken, they were cast head long into the Seas, and drowned every mothers sonne.

Vpon the 23. of *August*, being Saint *Bartholomewes* Eeve, and yeere aforesaid, to wit, *Anno* 1170. *Richard*, surnamed *Strangbow* Earle of Strigulia (whose original and of-spring in another place herafter (if God permit) shall bee laid downe) landed in the Haven of Waterford, where *Dermot Mac Morogh*, *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and *Maurice Fitz Gerauld*, and *Reimond le Grosse* met him, and joyned their forces together? *Reimond le Grosse* was made generall of the field, they tooke small rest after their arrivall; for upon *Bartholomew* day being tuesday, with Banners displayed, in good array they assaulted the City by water and by land, the townesmen manfully defended themselves, and gave them two repulses: *Reimond* having compassed the towne, espied without adjoyning unto the towne wall (where now standeth a strong Bulwarke) an old Cabban, propped with old timber, and entred into the old wall, the which proppes they sawed asunder, then downe falleth the cabban, and withall a great part of the wall: the breach thus made, the Brittaines doe enter, and in the streets kill man, woman and child, and there left them in heapes: In Reignald tower, upon the wall of the tower they found one *Reignald* (I take it the tower beareth the name of

him) and *Omalaghlin Ophelim*, Lord of the Decies, whose lives *Dermot Mac Morogh* saved: they found there other two, whom they put to the sword, they rifled the houses, they ransacked the City, they made havoc of all, lastly they left there a strong ward. Then according to precedent covenants, *Dermot* gave his daughter *Eva* in marriage to *Richard Strangbow*, and after solemnity thereof, they all marched with their forces towards Dublin: For *Dermot* bear them a deadly hatred, and hitherto winked at them, untill further opportunity served, for the villany and cruelty they shewed to his father; the townsmen of Dublin foreseeing his revenging mind, procured to their aid as many as they could throughout the land, they trenched, they plashed in paces, streets and narrow places, all the wayes along to Waterford, to hinder their march. *Dermot* was not ignorant thereof, whereupon he led the army from out the common and beaten way, through the Mountaines of *Glandelogh*, and came safe to the walles of Dublin. There the Citizens sent messengers to intreat for peace, and amongst others, *Laurence O Toole* Archbishop of Dublin: while they parled without for peace, Sir *Remond le grosse* and Sir *Miles Cogan* scaled the wals; for, saith *Cambrensis*, they were more desirous to fight under *Mars* in the field, then in the Senate to sit with *Iupiter* in Councell; they made a breach, they enter the Citie, they put all to the sword: in the meane while, *Hastulphus* the Commander of the City, with a great many of the better sort, with their Riches and

Iewels, escaped and fled by the Sea to the North Ilands.

When the Earle had spent a few daies in the towne, he left *Miles Cogan* Governour therof, and by the perswasion of *Dermot Mac Morogh*, he drew his forces into Meth to be avenged of *Ororicke*, whom some call *Morice*, some *Murdich*, who was the cause of his exile and whose wife *Dermot* had formerly taken away. The Earle no sooner entred the Countrey, but the Army was given wholly to the spoile; they robbed, they spoiled, they burned, and wasted all before them: *Roderic* King of Conoght and Monarch of Ireland, seeing his neighbours house set on fire, thought it high time to looke to his owne, and wrotte to *Dermot Mac Morogh*, contrary to the order of Peace formerly concluded, thou hast procured and allured a swarme and multitude of strangers, to invade this land; all the while thou didst containe thy selfe within compasse of thine owne territories, we winked at thy proceedings, but forasmuch as now thou not caring for thy oath, nor regarding the safety of thy hostages, hast so fondly and falsly passed thy bounds, I require thee that thou wouldest retire, and withdraw these excourses and inrodes of strangers, or else, to begin, I will not faile to cut off thy sonnes head, and send it to thee with speed.

Dermot despised the messenger, and would scarce vouchsafe to reade his letter; upon the messengers re-

turne, *Roderic* was mad, and in his rage, caused his pledges head, the sonne of *Dermot Mac Morogh* to be cut off. In this troublesome time, the Primate of Armagh called the Prelates and Clergie to a Synod; at Armagh, assembled a Councell; where, according to their wisedomes, they endeavoured to finde out the cause of these miseries that fell upon the land, they inquired not whether the Bishops had bought their Bishoprickes for money, whether their Parsons did pray, whether their Ministers were lettered; what whoredome, symony, or lechery, with other enormities, raigned among the Clergie, but simply, like themselves, posted over all to the Laytie, and concluded *(insipienter)* that the iust plague fell upon the people, for merchandizing of the English nation; for then they bought and sold of the English birth, such as they found, and made them bondslaves; so they served Saint *Patricke*, called the Apostle of Ireland, who was a bondman sixe yeeres in Ireland, but *Patricke* preached Christ, and the English nation reformed the land. Here the sacred letters reconcile all, *the stone which the builders refused, is become the corner stone, and why so? the answer followeth, it is the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.* But I may not so leave my Prelates, they synodically decreed as followeth: *that all the English men within the land, whatsoever they were, should bee manumised;* a worshipfull piece of worke, and no thanke to them all, for the English sword was then ready to cut off the Irish

heads: this reformation was but a sweeping of a house with a Foxes tayle.

The prosperous successes of Earle *Richard*, surnamed *Strangbow*, were no sooner effected, but fame flyed abroad, and flatterers carried it to *Henry* the seconds eares, and made him jealous, as Kings commonly are, that a subject as *Richard* was, should not onely in the right of his wife, content himselfe with Leinster, but most presumptuously without license, as the King alledged, attempt the conquest of a kingdome, where he formerly by grant of *Adrian*, was interessed. Whereupon the King in his iealous rage, indeavouring to stop the Springs and Water-courses, proclaimed: We, *Henry*, *&c.* Forbid and inhibit, *that from henceforth no shippe from any place of our dominion, shall traffique or passe into Ireland; and likewise charge that all our subjects upon their dutie of allegiance, which are there commorant, shall returne from thence into England before Easter next following, upon paine of forfeiture of all their lands, and the persons so disobeying, to be banished our land, and exiled for ever.*

The Earle seeing himselfe in this distresse, being in perill to lose his friends, and to want his necessaries out of his native soile, by entercourse of Merchants, calleth a Councell; where it was agreed and concluded, that Sir *Reimond Legrosse* should bee sent over to pa-

cifie the King (who then was in Aquitaine) with these letters: *Most puissant Prince, and my dread Soveraigne, I came into this land with your Majesties leave and favour (as farre as I remember) to aide your servant* Dermot Mac Morogh; *what I have wonne, was with the sword, what is given me, I give you, I am yours, life and living at your command.*

Vpon the receit of these letters, there fell of all sides, three disasters, the King was mightily incensed against Earle *Richard*, and therefore delayed Sir *Reimond Legrosse*, and gave him no answer; secondly, the death of *Thomas*, Archbishop of Canterbury troubled him exceedingly, and to helpe the readers memory with the time, it was as the rime delivereth,

Annus millenus, centenus septuagenus
Primus erat, primas quo ruit ense Thomas.

The third was, that *Dermot Mac Morogh* a most bountifull Prince, died and was buried at Fernes.

Anno 1171. *Hastulphus*, late Governour of Dublin (of whom I have formerly spoken) returneth, and entreth the haven of Dublin, with threescore saile to his aide, of Ilanders, Norwegians, and Esterlings, they forthwith landed, and unshipped themselves, and had to their Captaine, saith *Cambrensis*, one *Iohn Wood*, some call him mad *Iohn*, for the prankes he playd, for wood and mad beare one sense. *Stanihurst* calleth

him *Pewood, Douling, Heywood.* They were all mighty men of warre, and well appointed after the Danish manner, being harnessed with good Brigandines, jackes and shirts of maile; their Shields, Bucklers, and Targets, were round, and coloured red, and bound about with iron, and as they seemed in armes, so were they no lesse in mindes; iron-strong and mighty; they marched in battaile array towards the East gate of the Citie. *Miles Cogan* the Governour, with a faire company (yet but a handfull to the number of the enemy, sallied forth, and gave them battaile, where both sides lost many a tall man. *Miles Cogan* seeing himselfe overlaid with the furious rage and multitude of his adversaries, gave backe, and retired into the towne; by this time, *Richard Cogan* his brother had secretly issued out with a good company, at the South posterne gate, compassed the Danes, and being at the foot of the rereward, made mighty cry and shout, whereat the Danes were amazed, and the two brethren had the killing of them before and behinde. The Danes brake their array, threw their Armes away, fled towards their ships, where many also for haste were drowned. In this skirmish, *Iohn Wood* was slaine, and *Hastulphus* taken prisoner, and put to his ransome. The prodigalitie of this *Hastulphus* was such, that he contented not himselfe with life, but braved and bragged of his exploits, in the hearing of *Miles Cogan*, and therewithall delivered, that that attempt was nothing, but a taste or proofe of the Irish valour, and shortly, they should see another manner of forces

assault them; *What* (*saith* Miles Cogan) *is it not enough for him to have his life, but he must threaten us with further rebellion; goe, take him, and cut off his head.* And thus the blabbe of his tongue, turned to his confusion.

Shortly after, the Irish and country birth, lying aloofe, wayting for all opportunities, and understanding of some unkindenesse and displeasure conceived by King *Henry* the second, against Earle *Richard*, and in that quarrell generally against all the Britaines and invaders of Ireland; they put their heads together, they plot, they draw their draughts and devices, to lay siege to recover the Citie of Dublin, and the chiefest instrument was *Laurence O Toole*, Archbishop of Dublin, who wrote unto *Roderic*, King of Connaght, & unto *Gotred*, *alias Godfrey*, King of Man, and to all the Princes of Ireland, that it would please them (some in regard of neighbourhood, othersome in regard of naturall affection unto their native soile and distressed country men of Irish birth) put to their helping hand, ioyne their forces together, lay siege to the Citie of Dublin by sea and by land, relieve their brethren, rid them from the Britaines hands, and restore them to their former liberty. The Bishop for the good opinion that was held of his learning, gravitie, and sanctitie, prevailed, insomuch, that *Gotred*, King of Man, came into the harbour of Dublin, with thirty saile. *Roderic* the Monarch and forces of Ireland came by land, and incamped within sight of the

towne. Within the towne, were Earle *Richard Strangbow, Maurice Fitz Gerald, Reimond Legrosse*, lately arrived from out of England, *Miles Cogan, Richard Cogan*, with other worthy men and Citizens, to the number of thirty thousand fighting men. As they were prepared for battaile, (as commonly one mischiefe falleth in the necke of another) *Donald*, the base sonne of *Dermot Mac Morogh*, came in post to the Earle, and delivered how that *Robert Fitz Stephens* in his Fort of Carreck by Wexford, was besieged with three thousand men of Wexford and Kinsele, by the conduct of *Donald*, Prince of Limeric, sonne in law to *Dermot Mac Morogh*, who before time in his extremity, and in the warres betweene him and *Roderic* the Monarch, for chiefery, (at the request of *Dermot Mac Morogh*, was relieved by *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and so aided, that he foiled his enemy; and thus good is recompenced with evill. In this perplexitie and doubtfull danger, *Maurice Fitz Gerald* full of courage, turneth him to the Earle, and the martiall men in these words: you most valiant men, wee came not into this land, neither were we procured hither to be idle, or to live deliciously, but to try fortune, and to seeke adventures; wee stood sometime upon the top of the wheele, and the game went of our side, now mee thinkes fortune wheeles about, let us not be dismaid, for that which is low now, will be up againe, and so we must tarry and take our time; such is the mutability among the sonnes of men, the fickle and uncertaine course of

humane causes, so that prosperitie and adversitie, enterchangeably doe follow the one after the other. After day, commeth the night, and when the night is passed, the day dawneth againe; the sunne riseth, and spreads his beames over the face of the earth, holdeth his course to his fall, passeth the night season, and riseth againe; we who before this time have made great triumphs, and had the wings of fortune to flye withall, and are now clowded and inclosed by our enemies on every side, our victuals are scant, the King our Soveraigne Lord frowneth upon us, we are barred of release by sea and by land, our friends cannot helpe us, our enemies are ready to devoure us: plucke up your hearts, if God be with us, we care not who is against us; but alas my brother *Fitz Stephens*, whose valiantnesse, and noble enterprise brake the yce, and made way for us into this Iland, is now shut up in a weake hold, and feeble place, with wife and children, too weake and slender to keepe out so great a force. O trayterous *Donald* of Limiric, O trecherous and halfe-hearted people of Kensele and Wexford! peace is war, trust is trechery, and truth is falshood among them: why then doe we tarry, why doe we linger? is there any hope of reliefe from our native soile? no, no, the matter is now otherwise, and we our selves are presently in a worse case, for as our nation at this present is odious and hatefull unto the Irish men, so are we also mis-led with some disgrace in our country, wherefore in so much as fortune favoureth the forward and couragious, and discourageth the dastard and

faint-hearted, while our wits are fresh, while our bodies are able, while wee are all on heart, let us give the on-set; though we are not so many in number as they are, our courage and valour is knowne to exceed theirs, they are but naked wretches, and unarmed people. *Reimond Legrosse* immediately breaketh out in these speeches. My Vncle *Maurice* hath gravely delivered his minde, he hath pithily advised us, and prudently councelled us: this is no time to sit in councell, to spend time in speeches, or to use delayes, the danger is at hand, the enemy is at the doore, wee are compassed by sea and by land, there is no flying, we must fight it out; our provision is spent, England dares releeve us no more, Ireland defieth us, the Kings Maiestie (I know) dispraiseth not our activities, and yet graceth not our successes; he discommendeth not our valour, yet envieth all our glory, though in words he reporteth well of our service, yet in deeds secretly hindereth the course thereof; lastly, he feareth that which we meant not, and doubteth of that which we thinke not of; wherefore all doubts and delaies set apart, let us, as becometh men of our sort, try the course of fortune, and proue the force of the enemy; let that appeare unto them which is knowne unto us; of what race we came, and of what stock wee are discended. *Camber* the first King of Cambria our native Country, was our Ancestor, and the sonne of that Noble *Brutus*, the first and sole Monarch of Brittaine, whose Ancestor was *Troos*, the founder of that most antient City of

Troy, who descended from *Dardanus* the son of *Iupiter*, from whom is derived unto us, not onely the stemme of antient Nobility, but also a certaine naturall inclination of valiant minds and couragious stomachs resolutely to follow all exploits of prowesse and chivalry; and shall we now like sluggarts, degenerate from so noble a race, and like a sort of Cowards, be afraid of these naked and unarmed Raskals, in whom there is no valour, by reason of knowledge or experience in Armes? Shall such a rable of savages pinne us up within the wals of little Dublin? When in times past all the Princes in Greece kept warres the space of ten yeeres and odde months, against our Ancestors in the famous City of Troy; and could not preuaile against them, untill they used treasons, and practised treacheries which bred unto them a more infamous victory, then a glorious Triumph? Let it never be said, that the blood of the Trojans shall be stained in our pusillanimity, and receive reproach by our peevish dastardy: Fortune, though she be pourtraied to be blind, as ever void of right judgement, and to stand upon a rolling stone, as being alwaies flitting and unconstant; yet for the most part, shee helpeth such as be of couragious minds, & valiant stomachs; you wil say, we are but a few, and the enemy infinit in number; what then? Victory consisteth not in multitudes, neither conquest in numbers: Did not *Thomiris* the *Scythian* Queene, with hundreds, overthrow *Cyrus* with thousands, and tooke him and slew him? Did not *Laomedes* the Spartane encounter (having but

foure thousand Souldiers) with mighty *Xerxes*, who brought five hundred thousand to the field, and overthrew him? Did not *Alexander* with a few Macedonians ouerthrew *Darius*, the great Monarch of Persia? Did not he take him, his wife, and daughters prisoners, and make a Conquest of Persia? Haue not wee in our persons (all praise be given to God, the giver of Victory) even you, right honorable Earle at Waterford, my uncle *Fitz Stephens* at Wexford, my selfe at Dondorogh with a few given many the foile; what remains, sith time shall sooner faile then matter want? let us like men shew resolute minds in this service. And to conclude, my mind then and opinion is, that we doe issue out upon them as secretly and as suddenly as we may, and give the onset.

And for so much as *Roderic* of Conoght, is the generall of the field, in whom lyeth the chiefest force, and on whom all the rest doe chiefly depend, it shall be best to begin with him, and if we can giue him the overthrow, all the rest will flie, and we shall obtaine a glorious victorie; but if we shall fall into their hands and be slaine, yet shall we leave an honorable report and an immortall fame to our posteritie. He had no sooner ended his speech, but every man armed himselfe to goe forth, and give the onset: They divided the Army in three battailes; and although at the first, they contended for the Vanguard, yet quickly they were accorded and marched forward. *Reimond le Grosse* resolutely given, with twenty Knights, and

souldiers well appointed, tooke the Vanguard. *Miles Cogan* with thirty Knights, and many a worthy warriour, kept the maine battaile. Earle *Strangbow*, and *Maurice Fitz Gerald*, with fourty Knights, Gentlemen and common souldiers, took the Rereward, in every ward were placed some of the Citizens, and other some with martiall men, left at home for the guard and safety of the City: early in the morning when the enemy was unarmed & out of order, little thinking that so few within durst attempt to give the onset to so many without, they fell upon them, killed without mercy, and the rere was so forward, that they came with the Vanguard by wheeling about to the slaughter of the enemie. *Roderic* all this while trusting to his troupes and multitude of people, feared nothing, he took his ease and pleasure, and was bathing himself; but when the larum was up, & that he saw his men on every side fall to the ground, never tarried, called for man nor Page to array him, but tooke his mantle and ranne away all naked, and hardly escaped with life. The Britaines pursued after, and had the killing of them all that day, in the evening they returned into the Citie, not onely with the honour of the field, but rich booties, and praies of victuals, armour and other pillage, as much as man and beast could cary: Immediatly, also the rumor hereof, the other Campes were dispersed, namely, *Laurence* the Archbishop (whom it had beseemed better to have beene at home with his porthouse, then in Campe with rebels) *Mathelan Machalem*, *Gillemehelmocus*, *Otuetol*, *Ororic* Prince of

Meath, *Ocarol, alias Ocarvell* Prince of Vriell, *Machfalin, Ochadese,* with many other great Commanders, where every man shifted for himselfe; of *Gotred, alias Godfray* King of Man that came by Sea, I find nothing, for upon this disaster he tooke him to the seas the next day, without any further deliberation; *Miles Cogan* is left to governe Dublin, and the Earle with his Army marched towards Wexford, to raise the siege at the Carreke, to relieve *Robert Fitz Stephens;* as he passed by Odrone, the forces of Leinster, by the conduct of *Donole Obrene* Prince of Limerik, and *Donald Prince Osery* set upon him, and fought a cruell fight, but he went on with the losse of one man. As he came to the borders of Wexford, certaine messengers met and informed him of the mischance that happened to *Rober Fitz Stephens,* and the firing of the Towne of Wexford; adding moreover that the Wexfordians were fully determined, if the Earle came any further towards them, they would cut off all the heads of *Fitz Stephens* and all his company, and send them unto him; whereupon with heavy cheere and sorrowfull heart he changed his mind & turned to Waterford. But afore I proceede any further, I am to deliver the manner of the treachery and villany shewed unto *Robert Fitz Stephens: Donold* of Limrio, sonne in Law to *Dermot Mac Morogh,* while his father lived, he was one that favoured the Brittains, and not without cause; but now forgetting humanity returneth to his vomit, bends his course towards Wexford, and while other states of Ireland by East and by North, with might & maine

practised the rooting out of the Brittains, he flies to the South, and raiseth Wexford & Kensile to lay siege to the Carreke, the Fort of *Robert Fitz Stephens*. First they begin with force, and seeing that failed them, they fall to guiles and subtilities, under color of peace, pretending nothing but pure love, tender affection and safeguard of his person, and all that were with him; they bring with them two Bishops, the one of Kildare, the other of Fernes, in their formall moods, with other religious persons (O damned Prelats) and they had with them the Masse Booke, the host, with certaine Reliques; upon these they take corporall oathes, and sweare with great solemnity and protestations as followeth: (*For the good will and affection wee beare unto you*) whom we have alwaies found a curteous and bountifull Prince, we are to signifie unto you this much; how that Dublin is taken, *the Earle Strangbow, Maurice Fitz Girald, Reimond le Grosse, Miles Cogan*, with all the English are put to the sword, and now *Roderic* the Monarch, with all the power of Conoght and Leinster posteth hither to rase even with the ground, all the Forts, Holds, and Castles, which the Englishmen have, and especially to apprehend you *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and *Willam Not*, that were the forerunners into this land of all this mischiefe; wherefore take this for truth and be well advised what to doe, if they take you there is no mercy; if you will put yourselfe with your company and goods into our hands, in the faith of Christianity we sweare we will safely transport you and yours unto Wales, so shall you

not lose so much as a haire of your head; wherefore the great Army being at hand, yeeld, come forth and shippe your selfe for Wals. *Robert Fitz Stephens* (who would not in this case give credit) yeelded himselfe into their hands, immediatly (more like Iewes then Christians) they strippe them out of all that ever they have, they hang one, they throw another over a rocke, they breake anothers necke, one hath his eyes puld out, another hath his tongue cut, some they scourge with thongs, other some they take, and with sledges breake their Armes and thighes, the greatest kindnesse they shew is iron and imprisonment, the which *Robert Fitz Stephens* endured; now leaving these bloody Massacers and themselves, I will turne to Waterford after Earle *Strangbow*. When Earle *Strangbow* came to Waterford, he found there *Hervie de Monte Marisco* newly arrived out of England, with letters from the King, requiring him forthwith to repaire unto his Majesty. *Strangbow* together with *Hervy* tooke the first wind and went for England, and found the King at Newham not farre from Glocester, where he was in readinesse with a great Army to saile out into Ireland, where after sundry altercations passed betweene them, at length (as they say) by meanes of *Hervy*, the Kings displeasure was appeased, and it was agreed that the Earle should sweare alleageance to the King, and yeeld and surender unto him the City of Dublin, with the Cantreds thereunto adjoining, as also such Townes and Forts as were bordering upon the Sea side, and as for the residue he should have and

reteine to him and his heires, holding the same of the King and his heires.

Strangbow was no sooner knowne to be in England, and *Reimond* at Waterford, but *Ororic Monoculus*, the one eyed Prince of Meath, mustred a great number of Souldiers, and laid siege to the City of Dublin. *Miles Cogan* the Governour withall his company (while the enemy was carelesse) upon a sudden issued out and fell upon them unawares, and made a great slaughter of them, among whom both *Ororic* and his sonne were slaine.

In the British Chronicles copied by *Owen Cretten* out of the Abbies of Conwey in North-wales, and Stratflur in South-wales, I find recorded that when King *Henry* the 2. made preparation for the conquest of Ireland, *Richard Strangbow* Earle of Strigale, Marshall of England, being reconciled to the King, had all his Lands in England and Normandy restored unto him againe, and thereupon the King made him Seneschall (Steward, saith he, of Ireland) Then came *Rees* prince of South-wales and offred the King to further his Conquest, 300. Horses, 400. Oxen, and for performance of all services gave him 14. pledges; when they were presented the King made choice of 30 principall Horses, gave backe all the rest, confessing himselfe greatly pleasured at his hands.

Anno 1172. upon Saint Lukes day the 18. of *Octo-*

ber, *Henry* the 2. the 17. yeere of his raigne, the 41. of his age, entred the Haven of Waterford so writeth *Cambrensis* that lived then, and being landed to the harty joy of the English, and fained welcome of the Irishmen, had by them of Wexford formerly spoken of, *Robert Fitz Stephens* in Irons presented before him, whom the Wexfordians (herein I commend *Stanihursts* indifferent dealing) rather of malice & cankard spight, then for just cause, did charge with many hainous crimes. The King advisedly to pacifie the rage of furious people, for the present time, committed him to prison, whence shortly after, he was with honour and credit, discharged, and advanced to his great preferment.

After that the King had a little rested himselfe, and the messengers scattered themselves with newes over the land, the Princes were amazed, they knew the King's greatnesse was such, if faire meanes would not, force should constraine them, and therefore in policie resolved themselves to yeeld allegiance, homage and fealtie: Whereupon *Dermot Mac Carty*, Prince of Corke, began, became Tributarie, sware faith, truth, and loyaltie to the King of England. And the King thereupon gave the Kingdome of Corke to *Robert Fitz Stephens* and *Miles Cogan* as hereafter more at large shall appeare.

From Waterford the King raised his Army, and marched towards Lismore, where he tarryed two daies,

and from thence he marched to Cashill, not farre from the Shure, and thither came to him, *Donald O Brein*, Prince of Limric, who submitted himselfe, became tributarie, and swore fealty; whereupon the King as hee had formerly done with Corke, appointed a Governour for Limric: then also came in *Donall*, Prince of Ossorie, and *Omelaghlen Ophelin*, Lord of the Decies, with all the chieftaines of Mounster, submitting themselves, as others had formerly done, surrendring unto the Kings hands, their territories, and holding them againe at his pleasure. Thence the King returned to Waterford, left there his houshold, and *Robert Fitz Barnard* governour of the towne, and marched with his army towards Dublin. In his iourney there came unto him of the chiefest commanders of the land, *Omathelan, Machelan, Ophelan, O Mac Chelveie, Gille Mac Holemoc, O tuell helly Ocathdhessy, O Caraell* of Vriell, and *Roric* the sonne of *Monoculus* of Meth, but *Roderic* the Monarch came no neerer then the Shanon, where *Hugh de lacy*, and *William Fitz Adelme*, by the Kings command met him, and hee desiring peace, submitted himselfe, swore allegiance, became tributarie, and did put in (as all others had done) hostages and pledges for the performance of the same. Thus was all Ireland, saving Vlster, brought in subjection, and every Prince of the other parties, in his owne person, saving *Roderic* King of Connaght, submitted himselfe: but he subtilly alledged, that he submitted Connaght but not the command of all Ire-

land, the which he reserved for the Monarch and his successors: but of this hereafter if God permit.

Christmas drew on, which the King kept at Dublin, where hee feasted all the Princes of the land, and gave them rich and beautifull gifts, they repaired thither out of all parts of the land, and wonderfull it was to the rude people to behold the Majestie of so puissant a Prince, the pastime, the sport, and the mirth, and the continuall musicke, the masking, mumming, and strange shewes, the gold, the silver, and plate, the precious ornaments, the dainty dishes, furnished with all sorts of fish and flesh, the wines, the spices, the delicate and sumptuous banquets, the orderly service, the comely march, and seemly array of all officers: the Gentlemen, the Esquires, the Knights, and Lords in their rich attire (such as rugged Mantles and Irish Troosses were never acquainted withall) the running at Tilte in compleat harnesse, with barbed horses, where the staves shivered and flew in splinters, safer to sit, then upon an Irish Pillion that playeth crosse and pile with the rider, the plaine honest people admired, and no mervaile: but now to more serious matters. *Henry* 2. having thus conquered Ireland (with the envy of the French and forraigne Princes) without one drop of sweat, without drawing of sword, or shedding of one drop of English bloud, (as it became his Princely calling) turned himselfe to reforme the state of Ecclesiasticall, and the misdemeanours of holy Church,

whereof *Cambrensis* writeth: 'in the yeere of *Christs* 'incarnation 1172. and in the first yeere, when *Henry* 'the most Noble King conquered Ireland, *Christianus*, 'Bishop of Lismore and Legate of the Apostolike See; '*Donatus* Archbishop of Cashill; *Laureance*, Archbishop of Dublin; and *Catholicus*, Archbishop of 'Tuemond, with their suffragans, and fellow Bishops, 'Abbots, Priors, Deanes and Archdeacons, and many 'other Prelates of the Church of Ireland, by the commandment of the King, did assemble themselves, and 'kept a Synod at Cashill, and there debating many 'things concerning the wealth, estate, and reformation 'of the Church of Ireland, did provide remedies for 'the same. At this Councell, in behalfe of the King '(whom he had sent thither) there was *Raffe*, Abbot 'of Buldeway, *Raffe* Archdeacon of Landaffe, *Nicholas*, the Kings Chaplaine, with divers other Clerkes; 'sundry good Statutes and wholesome lawes were 'there devised, which were after subscribed and confirmed by the King himselfe, and under his authority, 'which were these that follow.

'First, it is decreed that all good and faithfull Christian people throughout Ireland, shall refraine and 'forbeare to marry with their neere kinsfolkes and cousins, and match with such as lawfully they might doe.

'Secondly, that children shall be catechized without the Church door, and baptized in the font appointed in the Church for the same purpose.

'Thirdly, that every Christian doe truely and faithfully pay yeerely, the tithes of his Cattell, Corne, and all other his increase and profits, to the Church or Parish where he is a parishioner.

'Fourthly, that all the Church lands and possessions throughout all Ireland, shall be free from all secular exactions and impositions, and especially that no Lords, Earles, or Noble men, nor their children nor family, shall extort or take any cony and livery, cosheries or cuddies, or any other like custome from thence, forth, in or upon any of the Church land and territories; and likewise that neither they, nor any other person, doe thenceforth exact out of the said Church lands, old wicked and detestable customes of cony and livery, the which they were wont to extort upon such townes and villages of the Churches, as were neere, and next bordering upon them.

'Fiftly, when earik or composition is made among the laye people, for any murther, that no person of the Clergie, (though he be a kinne to any of the parties) shall contribute any thing thereunto, but as they bee guiltlesse of the murther, so shall they be free from paying of money for any such release for the same.

'Sixtly, that all and every good Christian, being sicke and weake, shall before the Priest and his neighbours, make his last Will and Testament, and his debts and servants wages being paid, all his moveables

'to be divided, (if he have any children) into three 'parts, whereof one part to be to the Children, another 'to his Wife, and the third part to be for the perform-'ing of his Will; and if so be that hee have no chil-'dren, then the goods to be divided into two parts, 'whereof the one moytie to be to his Wife, and the other 'to the performance of his Will and Testament. And 'if he have no Wife, but onely Children, then likewise 'the goods to be divided into two parts, whereof the 'one to himselfe, and the other to his children:

'Seventhly, that every Christian dying in the Ca-'tholike faith, shall be reverently brought to the 'Church, and to bee buried, as appertaineth.

'Eightly and lastly, that all the divine Service in 'the Church of Ireland, shall be kept, used, and 'observed in the like order and manner as it is in the 'Church of England; for it is meet and right, that as 'by Gods providence and appointment, Ireland is be-'come now subject, and under the King of England: 'so the same should take from thence, the order, and 'rule, and manner how to reforme themselves, and 'to live in better sort.'

Gelasius, Primate of Armagh, was not at this Synod, but at his comming to Dublin, hee concurred with his Collegues, and confirmed the premises. He was a man of great learning, godly life, and great age; when by

reason of age, sight, and strength, and stomacke failed him, as he travailed, he had with him alwaies, a white Cow that gave him milke, and was his onely sustentation, *Gilbert* succeeded this *Gelasius* in that See. The Antiquaries of that time have recorded, that the winter during the Kings abode in Ireland: there rose such stormes and tempest by sea and by land, that no newes could be heard either out of England or Normandie, neither shippe or Barke crosse the seas, untill mid-Lent, at what time with an easterly winde, there came out of England, and Aquitaine in France, newes unto the King, how that there came into Normandy in France, two Cardinals from *Alexander* the third, to wit, *Albertus* and *Theodinus*, to enquire of the death of *Thomas*, Archbishop of Canterbury: Whereupon the King sent in post before him, to signifie that he was returning with all speede, and that he would conferre with them in Normandie, and leaving Ireland, hee was very sorry that time and leisure served not to lay things in better order for the stay of the land. And also suspecting the greatnesse of *Richard*, Earle *Strangbow*, whom at that time he tooke with him into England; hee appointed to governe Dublin, *Hugh de Lacy*, to whom he had given in Fee, the territorie of Meth, with twenty Gentlemen to his Guard. *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and *Morice Fitz Girald*, with twenty others to attend their persons. Likewise he left Governours over Waterford, *Humfrey de Bohune*, *Robert Fitz Bernard*, and *Hugh de Graunt devil* with forty persons to their guard.

Lastly, hee assigned over Wexford, *William Fitz Adelme, Philip de Bruesa,* and *Philip de Hastings,* with twenty to their guard, and tooke shipping at Wexford, Munday in Easter weeke, by sixe a clocke in the morning, with full saile, and landed the same day about noone, at Saint Davids in Wales; so writeth *Cambrensis* in his Vaticinall historie, and in his Itinerarie of Cambria. What time the King was in Ireland, there fell a great plague in his army, which was some cause of his departure from Dublin to Wexford. *Cambrensis* out of the mouth of the common people, attributeth it unto certaine Archers, cessed at Finglas, that cut downe the trees of the Church-yard, and therefore were they iustly punished, and left their bones there every one; but the British Chronicle, and *Holinshed* also, more likely to be true, affirmeth that there fell a plague among the Kings souldiers in Ireland, by reason of the change of the ayre, and victuals and concourse of people, corrupting the same.

The names of the men of account orderly as they came to the conquest of Ireland.

Dermot Mac Morogh, Prince of Leinster, after his returne out of England wintred at Fernes, expecting the comming of these Conquerours.*

Robert Fitz Stephens, the Kings Constable at Abertivy;

* *Anno* 1170.

David Barry.

Hervie de Monte Marisco, married *Nesta,* daughter to *Maurice Fitz-Girald.*

Willim Nott.

Maurice Prendregast.

Meilerus.

Maurice Fitz Girald.

Reimond le Grosse, nephew to *Robert Fitz Stephens,* married with *Basilia,* the sister of Earle *Strangbow.*

William Ferrand.

Richard Strangbow, Earle of Penbroke.

Miles Cogan, *Richard Cogan,* } brethren & nephewes to *Robert Fitz Stephens,* and *Maurice Fitz-Girald.*

**Henry* 2. King of England, &c.

Hugh de Lacy.

William Fitz Adelme.

Raffe Abbot of Bulldewa in Normandie.

Raffe Archdeacon of Landaff.

Nicholas, the Kings Chaplaine.

Humphrey de Bohune.

Robert Fitz Bernard.

Hugh de Grandevilla.

Philip de Brensa.

Philip de Hastings.

Silvester, Giraldus, Barry, Cambrensis.

John Ridensford.

* *Anno* 1172.

Girald.
Alexander. } the two sonnes of *Maurice Fitz Girald.*

William Makrell.

Philip Mercros.

William Morice, Fitz Girald his eldest sonne, married with *Elen,* sister to Earl *Strangbow.*

Griffin the sonne of *William Fitz Girald* the elder brother.

Philip Welsh.

Adam Herford,
.... *Herford,* } brethren.

.... *Purcell,* Lievetenant of the Army, slaine by the Waterfordians.

Nich. Wallingford a Prior, afterwards Abbot of Malmesburie.

David Welsh, nephew to *Reimond.*

Ieffrey Welsh.

Reimond of Kantan.

Reimond Fitz Hugh.

Milo of Saint *David.*

Robert Poer.

Osbert of Hertford.

Willin Bendoger.

Adam of Gernemie.

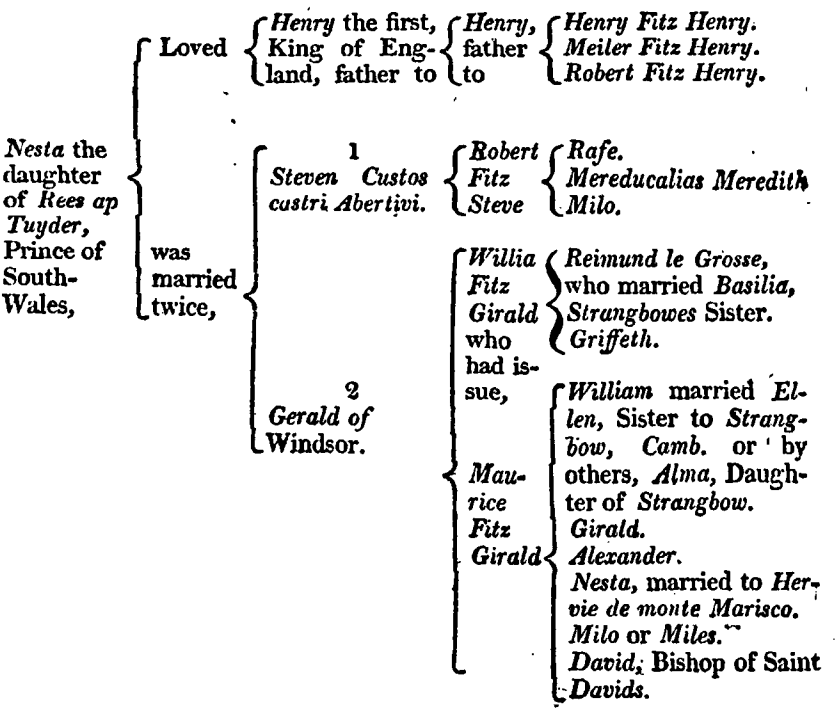
Hugh Tirell.

Iohn de Courcey.

Hugh Cantwell.

Redmond Cantimore.

Alliance of the chiefe Conquerours of Ireland.



Not long after the Kings departure out of Ireland, *Ororick* of Meth craved a parlee, with *Hughe Delacy;* pretending reformation of abuses and establishing of perfect love and amity; but meant nothing else, saving falshood, treason and villany; the place being appointed (*Cambrensis* calleth it *Ororics* Hill, I take it to be the Hill of Taragh) and oathes taken of each side, with conditions that all armes should be laid aside, and few persons approach to the place, *Ororic*, contrary to the covenants, laid an ambush, that upon a signe or token given by him, they should forth with issue out of the bushes, and ditches, and effect his traiterous devices: The night before the parley, *Griffith* the nephew of *Robert*; and *Morice*, being the sonne of *William* the elder brother, dreamed in his sleepe that he saw a great herd of wild hogges, rush upon *Hugh Delacy*, and his uncle *Maurice*, and that one of them being more furious and raging then the rest, had rent them with his tuskes, and tore them in pieces, if he had not with his force rescued them, and killed the boar: this dreame troubled him exceedingly, wherewith he acquainted his company, and made him and the rest be the more upon their keeping, to prevent treachery: The houre of parlee came, they met and confered together. *Griffith* not forgetting his dreame, made choice of seven tall men of his owne kindred, in whom he reposed great trust and confidence, well mounted, with swords, sparthes, and shields; raunged the fields (as nigh the Hill as they might) and made sundry Carreers and brave turnaments, under pretence

of recreation and pleasant pastime; yet alwaies casting an eye to the hill, to see the end of this parlee.

Hughe Delacy and *Ororic*, being somewhat long together, *Ororic* to worke his treason, stept aside, faining to make water, upon the signe he gave his men brought him his horse, and sparth, the which he taking upon his shoulder, ment therewith to have cloven *Hughe Delacy* his head, if the interpreter had not stept betweene, whose arme was cleane cut off and himselfe wounded to the death.

Maurice Fitz Girald and *Griffith* his nephew rush in, the traitours of the one side, the true men of the other are together by the eares; when *Ororic* the traitor tooke horse to runne away, *Griffith* with his launce runne him through, and killed him and his horse and three of his men, cut off his head and sent it to the King of England: this was the end of *Ororics* treason, and the effect of *Griffiths* dreame.

Immediately upon this, Earle *Richard* (being formerly upon reconciliation made with the King, appointed Seneschall of Ireland) is now sent out of Normandy, by especially commission from the King, with *Reimond le grosse* his brother in Law, in joint commission to governe the whole land, & to be his Lieutenant in Ireland; where he found the Irish saith *Cambrensis*, constant in inconstancy, firme in wavering, and faithfull in untruthes: he found emulation

betweene *Hervy* and *Reimond*, and the Army in a mutiny, for lacke of pay at *Herveies* hands; whereupon he made *Reimond* Lievetenant of the forces, *Reimond* immediatly mustred his men, drew them forth to the Decies among the Rebels, where they preyed and spoiled. Secondly, they marched to Lismore, where they did the like. Lastly, along the sea coast, they goe with their booties, preyes and rich pillage towards Waterford; and finding at Dunganan some thirteene botes out of Waterford and other places, they lade them with their preys, intending by water to saile for Waterford; while they waited for wind, Corke men envyed their successe; prepared 32. Barks, manned and furnished them out out of their Towne, to overthrow *Reimond* and the English men, and to recover the preyes; they met, they fought cruelly; Corke men are overthrowne and their Captain *Gilbert Mac Turger* was slaine, by a valiant Knight *Philip Welsh*, and finally *Adam Herford* with all his charge, safely arived in Waterford. *Reimond* was not at this skirmish, but by the way he met with *Dermot Mac Corty* Prince of Desmond, who with great power was come to the aid of the men of Corke. They likewise skirmished, and fell to a cruell fight, where *Dermot* forsooke the field with small credit, and *Reimond* went to Waterford with four thousand head of cattell.

Immediately upon this, news came out of England unto *Reimond* that *William Fitz Girald* his father, was departed this life; whereupon he sailed to Wales,

and *Hervey De monte Marisco* was appointed by the Earle, Lieutenant of the forces. This *Hervey* to advance his credit, purposed to worke some exploits, and drew out of Dublin the Earle to Cashil; there also after consultation by mandat from the Earle, he appointed the souldiers that were at Dublin to meet him: When they came as farre as Ossorie, *Donald* Prince of Limirik, having by his espials before hand intelligence thereof, stole upon them in the morning; slue of them foure Knights, whereof *O'Grame* an Irish man was one, and foure hundred souldiers; with this the Earle was discouraged, and went to Waterford; the Irish gathered heart and determined to roote out al the English men. So that *Roderic* Prince of Conoght tooke this opportunity, passed the Shannan, and wasted all to the walles of Dublin. The Earle being in this perplexity wrote unto *Reimond*, that was in Wales. *As soone as you have read those our letters, make all the haste you can to come away, and bring with you all the helpe and force you can make, and then according to your own will and desire, you shall assuredly enjoy that which you long looked for.* Immediatly he prepared himselfe, together with his cousin *Meilerius*; shipped 30. young Gentlemen of his own kindred. 100. horsemen, with 300. archers & foot, of the best and chosen men of all Wales; and in 20. Barkes arrived in Waterford: It was at such time as the Waterford men had determined to kill every English man within the walles; but when they saw the Barkes come in with flags, and ban-

ners displaid, they were astonied, and staid their course.

Reimond entreth the towne of Wexford, setteth all in order, taketh the Earle with him, and all their forces, and went to Wexford; hee had left behinde him one *Purcell* his Lievetenant to guard the town, whom the Waterfordians slue, and put to the sword, of English birth, man, woman and childe; but such as had fled to *Reynolds* towre, plagued them sore afterwards, drove them to intreate for peace, the which they obtained with hard conditions: And, saith the booke of *Houth*, the Waterfordians were ever after the lesse beleeved. For all the troubles in England and Normandie, and these treasons and rebellions in Ireland, the King was not unmindefull to quiet the people, and to establish himselfe and his heires in the kingdome; first, he sent Embassadors to Rome to cleere himselfe of the death of *Thomas* of Canterbury: secondly, he sent messengers thither concerning the state of Ireland, whereunto *Alexander* the third, answered as followeth, *Alexander the Bishop, the servant of the servants of God,* to his dearely beloved sonne, the Noble King of England, greeting, grace and Apostolike benediction. Forasmuch as things given and granted upon good reason, by our predecessors, are to be well allowed of, ratified and confirmed; wee well considering and pondering the graunt and priviledge for and concerning the dominion of the land of Ireland to us appertaining, and lately given

by *Adrian* our predecessor; we following his steps; doe in like manner confirme, ratifie and allow the same, reserving and saving to Saint *Peter*, and to the Church of Rome, the yeerely pension of one penny out of every house, as well in England, as in Ireland; provided also that the barbarous people of Ireland by your meanes be reformed and recovered from that filthy life, and abhominable conversation, that as in name, so in life and manners they may be Christians; and that as that rude and disordered Church, being by you reformed, the whole nation may also, with the profession of the name, be in acts and deeds, followers of the same. And saith the booke of *Houth*, *Alexander* the third besought the devill to take them all that gainesayed this Kings title, *Amen*. *Henry* 2. sent this priviledge to Ireland by *Nicholas Wallingford*, a Prior, afterwards Abbot of Malmesbury, and *William Fitz Adelme*. And then being at Waterford, they caused an assembly, and a Synod of the Bishops and Clergie within the land to be gathered together, where, in open audience, this priviledge of *Alexander*, and the other of *Adrian* (formerly spoken of) were read, and published, and ratified. *Reimond* having setled his affaires at Wexford, marched towards Dublin, the noyse of his comming drave *Roderic* the rebell of Connaght away; he was no sooner come to Dublin, but the newes of the rebellion of Limric followed after, where *Donald O bren* having sworne faith and fealty unto *Henry* 2. is now revolted and turned to his vomit.

Reymond maketh preparation, mustereth his men, chose out 26. gallants, 300. horsemen, and 300. Archers, and foote, and commeth to Lymeric, where he found the Bridges drawn, the river swift and impassable, the townesmen upon the walls, with all manner of defence for their safeguard. *David Welsh*, a lusty Gentleman, maketh no more adoe, but putteth spurres to his horse, and with good guiding thereof, crosseth the river, and got to land; immediately he calleth to his company, come, I have found a Ford: yet for all that, none would follow, but *Ieffery Welsh*, and *Meilerius Fitz Henry*. Then *Reimond* turneth him to the army with these words: *You worthy men, who of nature are valiant, and whose Prowesse we have well tryed, come away, the way heretofore not knowne, and the river hitherto thought not passable, by our adventures, a foord is now found therein; let us therefore follow him that is gone before, and helpe him being now in distresse; let us not suffer nor see so worthy a Gentleman thus for our common cause and honour, oppressed, to perish, and to be cast away before our eyes, and in our sight, for want of our help, and by meanes of our dastard cowardize. It is no time to use many words, the shortnesse of the time, the present necessitie of this Noble Gentleman, and the state of our own honour, urgeth expedition, and requireth haste.* And even with the words, he put spurres to his horse, and adventureth the river, after whom, followed the whole company, every one striving who might be formost.

And as God would, they passed all over safe, saving two souldiers, and one *Gwydo* a Gentleman: when they had recovered land, the enemy fled, whom they pursued, and in the chase slue a number of them, they entred the towne, got great spoyles and riches, but greater honour and fame. When all was quiet, *Reimond* left there a strong Garrison, and *Miles* of Saint *Davids*, Lievetenant over them, and returned to the borders of Leinster.

Envy hardly sleepeth, but is still devising of mischiefe; *Hervie de monte Marisco*, though now by marriage allyed unto *Reymond*, yet by malice worketh his overthrow, enuying his honour and prosperous successe, sendeth secret letters to the King against him, which are not worthy to be recorded, being but the sinke of secret malice. The King, (as the nature of Princes is to be jealous and suspitious of any greatnesse) is easily brought to credit *Hervie*, and thereupon sendeth foure of his servants to Ireland, *Robert Poer*, *Osbert* of Herlotte, or Hereford, *William Bendeger*, and *Adam* of Gernemie; two of them to stay with Earle *Richard*, and the other two to bring *Reimond* away with them; as *Reymond* was ready to goe for England, newes came that *Donald*, Prince of Lymeric had besieged the towne, and that the garrison was greatly distressed, and in want of victuals: the Earle, with *Reimond* and the foure Gentlemen, fell to consultation, what course to hold; they found in the army a secret mutiny, where the souldiers

said flatly, they would not serve that way, unlesse *Reimond* were their Captaine; to be short, it was concluded that *Reimond* should undertake the service; when he had mustered and made choice of horse and foot, he marched towards Lymeric: *Donald* Prince of Ossory, who bore private grudge to *Donald* of Lymeric, *Morogh* of Kencile, with other Irish men, then served and attended upon *Reimond.* By the way a Post came, and certified *Reimond,* that *Donald* of Lymeric had raised his siege, and was come to the pace of Cashill to give him battaile; this pace of it selfe was naturally very strong, but by trenching, and hedging, and plashing of trees, it seemed invincible. When of each side they were ready to joyne battaile, *Donald,* Prince of Ossory being desirous to see his enemy of Lymeric and Thomond overthrowne, turneth him to the English men with these words: *You worthy, Noble, and valiant Conquerours of this land, you are this day valiantly to give the onset upon your enemies, which if you doe after your old and accustomed manner, no doubt the victory will be yours; for we with our sparthes, and you with your swords, will sharpely pursue them, as they shall very hardly escape our hands, & avoid our force, but if it so fall out (which God forbid) that you be overthrowne, and hove the worse side, be you assured that wee will leave you, and turne to our enemies, and take part with them. Wherefore be of good courage, and looke well to your selves, and consider that you are now farre from any Fort or place of refuge, and therefore if you should*

be driven to flye, the same will be long and dangerous unto you. As for us, ye may not trust to us, for we determine to sticke to them who shall have the victory, and will pursue and be on the jackes of them who shall flye and runne away: and therefore be no longer assured of us, then whilst yee be Conquerours: Meilerius, who had the foreward, being somewhat moved and warmed with those words, suddenly, like a blast of winde, entred the Passe, pulled away the bushes, brake downe the hedges, the Pioners filled the trenches, and speedily made plaine the way, with no small slaughter of the enemies, and so they marched without any great perill to Lymeric, where they releeved the army, and set things in order, and rested a short time. *Roderic* of Connaght, and *Donald* of Thomond finding themselves weake, craved a parlee, it was granted them: *Roderic* would needs keepe on the water, and *Donald* kept the wood. Who would trust them that would trust no other? *Reimond* chose the midst betweene them both; to be short, a peace was concluded, they both submitted themselves, gave hostages, made fealtie, and swore to be true thenceforth for ever to the King of England, and to his successors after him. This service was no sooner performed, but there came messengers to *Reimond* from *Dermot Mac Carty* Prince of *Desmond,* humbly craving his aide, against his eldest son *Cormac O Lechan,* who was in armes against his natural father: with the advice of his Councell; *Reimond* granteth aide, hee marcheth towards Corke and subdueth the rebell, the sonne dis-

sembleth with the father and clapt him in prison: the father requiteth the sonne with like: he got him in under colour of peace, clapt him in prison and cut off his head.

And not long after, saith *Cambrensis*, the men of Corke at a parlee not farre from the Towne, slew their Prince *Dermot Mac Carty*, and most of his company.

Anno 1177. (so writeth *Holinshed*) *Henry* the 2. held a Parliament at Windsore, where *Laurence* Archbishop of Dublin was present; as what time *Roderic* King of Conoght sent thither the Archbishop of Tuam, the Abbot of Saint *Brandon*, with one *Laurence* his Chaplen; offring all submission and loyalty. The King willingly heard them, and gladly concluded a Peace at the importunate suit of his Messengers to avoid further trouble; injoyning *Roderic* to pay him in token of subjection, a tribute of Cow hides, the Charter of agreement was drawne and subscribed as followeth.

Hic est finis & concordia quæ facta fuit apud Windesore, in Octabis Sancti Michaelis, Anno gratiæ 1175. *Inter Dominum Regem Angliæ Henricum secundum; & Rodericum Regem Conaciæ, per Catholicum Tuamensem Archepiscopum & Abbatem C. Sancti Brandani, & Magistrum Laurentium Cancellarium Regis Conaciæ*

1. *Scilicet quod Rex Angliæ concedit predicto Roderico Ligio homini suo Regnum Conaciæ quamdiu ei fideliter servet, vt sit Rex sub eo, paratus ad servitium suum, sicut homo suus & ut teneat terram suam, ita bene & in pace sicut tenuit antequam Dominus Rex Angliæ intraret Hiberniam; reddendo ei tributum: & totam illam terram & habitatores terræ habeat sub se, & justiciæ ut tributum Regi Angliæ integrè per solvant, & per manum ejus sua jura sibi conservent, & illi qui modo tenent, teneant in pace, quam diu manserint in fidelitate Regis Angliæ, & fideliter & integre persolverint tributum & alia jura sua quæ ei debent, per manum Regis Conaciæ, salvo in omnibus jure & honore Domini Regis Angliæ & suo.*

2. *Et si qui ex eis Regi Angliæ, & ei rebelles fuerint, & tributum & alia jura Regis Angliæ, per manum ejus solvere noluerint, & a fidelitate Regis Angliæ recesserint, ipse eos justitiet & amoveat, & si eos per se justitiare non poterit; Constabularius Regis Angliæ & familia sua de terra illa juvabunt eum ad hoc faciendum, quum ab ipso fuerint requisiti, & ipsi viderint quod necesse fuerit, & propter hunc finem reddet predictus Rex Conaciæ Domino Regi Angliæ tributum singulis annis; scilicet, de singulis decem animalibus, unum corium placibile mercatoribus, tam de tota terra sua quan de aliena.*

3. *Excepto quod de terris illis quas Dominus Rex*

Angliæ retinuit in dominio suo, & in dominio Baronum suorum nihil se intromittet: Scilicet Duvelina cum pertinentijs suis, & Midia cum omnibus pertinentijs suis, sicut unquam Murchart Wamai Leth Lachlin, *eam melius & plenius tenuet, aut aliqui qui eam de eo tenuerint. Et excepta Wesefordia cum omnibus pertinentijs suis, scilicet cum tota Lagenia, & excepta Waterf. cum tota terra illa quæ est a Waterf. usque ad Dungarvan; ita ut Dungarvan sit cum omnibus pertinentijs suis, infra terram illam.*

4. *Et si Hibernenses illi qui aufugerint redire voluerint ad terram Baronum Regis Angliæ, redeant in pace reddendo tributum predictum quod alij reddunt, vel faciendo antiqua servitia quæ facere solebant pro terris suis, et hoc sit in arbitrio Dominorum suorum, et si aliqui eorum redire noluerint, Domini eorum et Rex Conaciæ accipiat obsides, ad omnibus quos ei Comisit Dominus Rex Angliæ ad voluntatem Domini Regis et suam, et ipse dabit obsides ad voluntatem Domini Regis Angliæ illos vel alios, et ipsi servient Domino de Canibus et Avibus suis singulis annis de presentis suis, et nullum omnino de quacunque terra Regis sit, retinebunt contra voluntatem Domini Regis. Hijs testibus Richardo Episcopo Wintoniæ, Gaufrido Episcopo Eliensi, Laurentio Duvelinensi Archepiscopo, Gaufrido, Nicolao, et Rogero Capelanis Regis, Guilelmo Comit. Essex, et aliis multis.*

Moreover at that Parliament, the King gave an

Irishman named *Augustine*, the Bishopricke of Waterford, which was then voyd, and sent him unto Ireland, with *Laurence* the Archbishop of Dublin, to be consecrated of *Donatus* Archbishop of Cashill.

Anno 1176. *Bertran de Verdon* founded the Monastery of *Crokisdan*. As *Reimond* marcheth towards Leinster, newes came unto him from the Lady *Basilia* his wife, that *Strangbow* was dead, the which hee concealed with good countenance; and called a secret councell of the wiser sort and trustiest friends, how to dispose of the State of the Land, afore the Irish were acquainted therewith: it was agreed upon for that the enemy were many, the forces but few, they should strengthen all their holds upon the Sea cost untill the K. pleasure were further knowne, and withdraw the midland garrisons to supply and compleat the same. And among others they thought good to take the garrison out of Lymerik and deliver the Towne to the charge of *Donald O brien* of Thomond Prince of Lymericke; he being sent for, came in poast, understanding *Reimonds* pleasure, was the gladdest man that might bee, and undertooke the charge, *Viz.* to keepe the Towne to the Kings use, and at his pleasure to redeliver it, as also in the meane time to keepe the peace: this he undertooke with Corporall oathes, and solemne vowes; and thereupon delivered hostages. But the Englishmen were no sooner over the one end of the Bridge, but *Donald* broke the other end, and set fire in the foure quarters of the Towne,

saying there shall no English race rest here any longer: This they beheld with their eyes, to their no small griefe of mind. *Cambrensis* inveyeth against this *Donald O brien* calling him traitour, wicked, impudent, perfidious, perjured and what not? This was in *Anno* one thousand, one hundred, seventy seven.

Earle Strangbow left behinde, one daughter of tender yeeres, and lyeth buried in the Church of the blessed Trinity in Dublin, over against the Pulpit, in the body of the Church, whose exequies, *Laurence O Toole*, Archbishop of Dublin did solemnize with great reverence; whereupon the King sent into Ireland, *William Fitz Adelme* to be his Lievetenant, with the allowance of twenty Gentlemen of his houshold, and joyned with him in commission, *Iohn de Courcy*, with the allowance of tenne men to attend his person. *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and *Miles Cogan*, who had nobly served him in his wars two yeeres, with the allowance of twenty men to attend their persons; at which time, saith *Holinshed*, the Irish men paid the King a tribute of twelve pence yeerely for every house, or else for every yoke of Oxen, (*alias* plow) which they had of their owne.

Richard, surnamed *Strangbow*, had to his father, *Gilbert*, likewise surnamed *Strangbow*, for his valour & strength; this *Gilbert* was E. of Ogye in Normandie, & Lord of Totenham, Alverdiston, & Wolaston in England, so created by *Henry* 1. *William*

the son of *Osbert*, a Norman, E. of Ogie in Normandie, had issue, *Richard*, E. of Ogie, this *Richard* had issue *Walter* & *Gilbert*, aforesaid father to *Richard* E. *Strangbow*; *William Fitz Osbert* came into England in the ayde of *William* the Conquerour. And as far as I can learn, *Walter* was the first Earle of Penbroke (the Britaines call it Penbraich More, the head of an arme of the sea) whence both the Countie, and the most noble Earldome have their denominations. *Arnulph de monte Gomerik*, the younger sonne of *Roger de montegomerik*, that was by *William* the Conquerour created Earle of Arundell and Shrewsbury, builded the Castle of Penbroke, where *Henry* the seventh was borne; *William* the Conquerour gave him Divet and Cardigan, hee was Earle of Ogie, and the second Earle of Penbroke, and married the daughter (by the mediation of *Girald de Windsore*, Constable of his Castle) of *Morogh*, King of Leinster in Ireland. *Gilbert*, surnamed *Strangbow*, was created by King *Stephen*, the third Earle of Penbroke, hee was Earle of Ogie in Normandie, Lord of Totenham, Alverdiston, Wolaston, and Cardigan, and in England succeeded *Arnulph*. *Henry* the first made him Earle of Strigule, now called Chepstow, and gave him Cardigan; this *Gilbert* builded Castrogie, *alias* Castrum Ogie, in Gwent, and the Castle of Stratmirike.

Richard, surnamed *Strangbow*, succeeded his father *Gilbert*; his stile as I take it is thus. *Richard*,

surnamed *Strangbow*, Lord of Totenham, Alverdiston, Wolaston, and Cardigan; in England, Earle of Penbroke, Earle of Strigule, *alias Domonius de Chepstow* in England, *Earle of Ogie in Normandie, Earle of Leicester, Earle Marshall of England, Vicegerent of Normandie, Lord Lievetenant of Ireland, and Prince of Leinster in the right of Eva his wife, sole heire of Dermot Mac Morogh, King of Leinster.*

This *Richard* had issue by his first wife, a sonne, a fine youth, and a gallant stripling, who following his father with some charge in battaile array, as he passed by Idrone in Leinster, to relieve *Robert Fitz Stephens* in Wexford, upon the sight and cry of the Irish men, when his father was in cruell fight, gave backe with his company, to the great discouragement of the host, yet the Earle got the victory, and commanded with the teares in his cheekes, that his sonne should be cut in the middle with a sword for his cowardize in battaile; he was buried in the Church of the blessed Trinitie in Dublin, where now his father resteth by his side, and caused the cause of his death for an Epitaph to be set over him.

Nate ingrate mihi pugnanti terga dedisti,
Non mihi; sed genti & regno quoque terga dedisti.

My sonne unkinde didst flye the field, the father fighting hard,
Nor me, nor English birth didst weigh, nor kingdome didst regard.

How the sonne pleaded with his father for the place of service, and how the father answered, *Stanihurst* hath many circumstances hereof, and delivered, that his owne father in his fury, and in the face of the enemy, cut him off, and marvaileth that *Cambrensis* would conceale it, and in the end taketh it as a matter of truth, both by the testimony of the Tombe in Christ Church, as also, by the industry of Sir *Henry Sidney*, Knight, a great favourer of Antiquities, in preserving the same, to the knowledge of the posterity.

Richard Earle *Strangbow* by his second wife *Eva*, the daughter of *Dermot Mac Morogh*, had issue, one daughter, *Isabell*, whom *Richard* the first gave in marriage to *William Maxfield*, Lord *Maxfield*, Earle Marshall of England, of whom (God willing) I shall have occasion to speake further, when I come to his time.

The same yeere that *Strangbow* dyed, *viz.* 1177. (so *Holinshed* writeth) *Iohn de Courcy* entred Vlster, discomfited the Irish, and wanne the Citie of Dune, where the body of Saint *Patricke*, Saint *Colme*, and Saint *Brigide* the Virgin rests, whom *Courcy* calleth *tria jocalia Hiberniæ, the three jewels of Ireland.* At the winning of Dune, *Roderic* King of Connaght, and Monarch of Ireland, (at severall times before sworne to the King) raised a mighty army against *Courcy*, where *Roderic* was overthrowne, and the Bishop of Dune taken prisoner among other rebels;

the which Bishop, at the request of Cardinall *Vinian* (then present) was set at liberty. This Cardinall, saith mine Author, intitled *Sancti Stephani de monte Celio*, was sent from *Alexander* 3. and comming into England without licence, was pardoned by *Henry* 2. and permitted to goe into Scotland, and the north parts, where his commission directed him; when he had ended his businesse in Scotland, he passed over into Man, where he held his Christmas with *Gotred*, King of Man, and after the Epiphanie, sailed from thence into Ireland, and came thither (saith *Newbrigiensis*) the same time that the English men invaded the country, and was entertained by *Roderic*, and the Bishop of Dune, and others, with great reverence.

The Irish men aske councell of *Vivian* the Legate, what in that case he thought best to be done, whether they should fight, or yeeld unto the English nation; he gave counsell, forgetting what *Adrian* 4. and *Alexander* 3. had formerly granted and said, *fight in defence of your country*. This Legate (craftily preventing all mishaps) took the Church of Dune for his sanctuary, and had in readinesse the Popes commission, and the King of Englands Passe unto the Captaines of Ireland for his safe couduct: From thence he went to Dublin, called the Prelates, held a councell, and fiilled his bagges with the sinnes of the people; the English Captaines understanding of it, gave him in charge, either to depart the land, or to goe to the

warres, and serve for pay with them, and no longer to receive money for nought.

In the booke of *Howth* it is further alledged, how that this Legate in his Synod at Dublin (whether it were to curry favour with the English men, and to colour his other pranckes, it forceth not greatly) shewed and published openly the King of Englands right to Ireland, with the Popes grant and confirmation, and accursed all those that gainesaid the same.

Now to the true history of Sir *Iohn de Courcy*, as worthy a Knight for martiall prowesse, as ever trode upon Irish ground, whom *Cambrensis* lightly overskipped, partly upon private grudge, for that Sir *Iohn de Courcy* allowed him not for Vicar generall in Ireland, and Secretary to the State, partly in favour of Sir *Hugh Delacy*, who maligned and envied the honor and renowne, and prosperous successes of *Courcy*; lastly, for feare of King *Iohn*, into whose displeasure *Courcy* fell, through the false accusation of *Lacy* and his faction, yet the certainty of his exploits hath beene preserved, and in Latine committed to Paper by a Fryer in the North, the which booke *Oneil* brought to Armagh, and was translated into English by ..... *Dowdall*, Primate there, *Anno* 1551. He was by father a Norman, by mother a Cambrian or Britaine, and married the daughter of *Gotred*, King of Man; he was a Gentleman descended, as it seemeth by his coate,

of an antient house, of whom the Irish men hold that *Merlin* prophecied, where he wrote: *A white Knight sitting on a white horse, bearing birds in his shield, shall be the first which with force of Armes, shall enter and subdue Vlster.*

He served King *Henry* the second in all his warres, and in France he met with a worthy Knight, Sir *Amoricus Tristeram*, who married *Courcy* his sister, and whether it was derived of the Ladies name, or for that they were married on Saint *Laurence* day, ever after hee and his posterity after him, was called Sir *Amoricus de Sancto Laurentio*, whence the Noble house of *Howth* is lineally discended, whereof hereafter in another place more at large. These two Knights became sworne brethren in the Church of our Lady at Roane; where solemnely they vowed to serve together, to live and dye together and equally to divide betweene them what they wanne by the sword, or should be given them in regard of their service: Thus they continued in France, Anjou, Normandy, and England; and when Sir *Iohn de Courcy* was joyned in commission with *William Burgh, Fitz Adelme* and others; Sir *Amoricus de Sancto Laurentio*, accompanied him into Ireland, where *Courcy* received a graunt of the King, by Patent for him and his heires or assignes after him, to enjoy in that Land all that he could Conquer with the sword, reserving to the King homage and fealty; they landed at Houth and there fought a cruell fight by the side of a Bridge, where Sir *Iohn de Courcy* being

sickly, taried abord the shippe. Sir *Amoricus* being Chifetaine and Generall of the field by land, behaved himselfe most worthily; many were slaine on both sides, but Sir *Amoricus* got the victory, with the losse of seven of his owne blood, sonnes, uncles and nephewes, whereupon for his singular valour and good service there performed, that Lordship was allotted unto him for his part of the conquest, with other things which Sir *Iohn de Courcy* gave him. Immediately, Sir *Iohn de Courcy*, Sir *Amoricus de Sanct Laurentio*, and Sir *Roger Poer*, so well appointed as then contented them, directed their course towards the North; the principall cause that moved them (besides their valour) was the hard government of *William Fitz Adelme*, Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, whose conditions *Cambrensis* who then lived and was conversant with him, delivereth in this sort. He was covetous, proud, malicious, envious, a favorite of wine and women, and good to none, but to his back and belly: and by his backe he understood his kindred, and by his belly, he ment his children, for he opposed himselfe, most enviously, against the *Girraldins*, *Fitz Stephens* and *Barries*, the first most valiant Conquerors of the Land, and against their posterity, &c.

While *Courcy* is on his way, give me leave, gentle Reader, to eternise the Memoriall of *Maurice Fitz Gerald:* As he was of birth and parentage nobly & worshipfully descended, so was he in condition and for martiall prowesse every way renowned. *Cambrensis*

his kinsman commendeth him greatly, and no lesse then he deserved. He left this world to the great griefe of all the true harts in Ireland, and lieth buried in the Monastery of grey Friers without the walles of Wexford, his .... sonnes whom *William Fitz Adelme* maligned, builded the Castle of Fernes. In his time, (saith *Cambrensis*) at Wirlo, where *Maurice Fitz Girald* dwelled, there was a Monster, begotten by a wicked man of that nation upon a Cow, a vice (saith he) at that time too common among that nation. It had the body of a man, but all the hinder parts of an oxe, from the anckles of the legges, and the wrists of the armes, he had the hoofes of an oxe; his head was all bald saving a few small and thinne haires; his eyes, great, round, and blacke like an Oxe; nose he had none, but two holes; speake hee could not, but onely bellow like a Cow: this Monster did daily resort to the house of *Maurice Fitz Girald* about dinner time, and such meat as was given him, he tooke it in his hoofes, and put it to his mouth, and so fed himselfe. Diviners in those daies construed this of the government of *Fitz Adelme*, the which in their opinion was monstrous, but there I leave, and returne to *Courcy*.

Iohn de Courcy after foure dayes, some miles come to Daud without resistance, and unlooked for, contrary to all mens expectation, the which in a word hath beene spoken of before: strange it is to see what a sudden feare will worke. *Dunlenus*, (whom I take to be *O Donell*) no base nor meane Commander

of that place, fled away, left armes, men and munition behinde, happy was hee (in his owne opinion) that he had escaped the hands, he wist not of what enemy; the trumpets sounded, the armour ratled, the women clapt their hands, the children cryed, the townesmen to goe, the leaders entred, the souldiers ryfled, the towne upon a sodaine was ransacked, doores, windowes, cupboards, chests flew open, the army after long march, and sore travaile, being in great want and weakenesse, had their housing, firing, dyet, and fare of the best, bedding, cloathing, gold, silver, plate, and rich booties, without checke or controulement of any, and respite for certaine daies to breath, rest, and recreate themselves. In the necke of this out of Scotland, the winde blew one *Vinianus* a Cardnall (spoken of before) which tooke upon him to intreate a peace betweene the two nations, but could not prevaile. After eight dayes, *Roderic* the Monarch, and *O Donnell*, King of Duune, had mustred their men, gathered forces, gotten great ayde, and prepared an hoast of tenne thousand fighting men, and came to besiege the City. Sir *Iohn de Courcy*, having but seven hundred, thought best not to bee cooped within, nor caged like a Bird, prepared to give them battaile abroad, marched forth, and ordered his army as followeth; he divided his men into three companies, the horsemen being seven score, were set in a winge on the left hand, under the leading of Sir *Amoricus de Saint Laurantio*, every horseman having a bowman behinde him. On the right hand, Sir *Roger Poer*, who had married Sir *Amoricus* Neece,

led the foot company, close by a bogge side, in the midst came Sir *Iohn de Courcy*, with his company; the way was narrow where they should encounter, and the English men had the vantage of a great hedge and ditch of the one hand, and a bogge on the other to gall the enemies horses, where no horse could enter within them. *Odonell* seeing the Horsmen to be but a few, commanded his foot and maine battaile to make a stand untill hee sent them word to march on, meaning to make short worke with the Horsemen, and so to breake the necke of the strength of the battaile; the Horsemen joyne battaile, the Archers gall *Odonels* horses with arrowes, whom the English launce slew not, the horse unsadled, and when the English quiver was empty, the archer with his sword haught the horses, and dispatched the men that were unhorsed and cast to the ground. *Odonels* horsemen being somewhat discomfited retired, Sir *Amoricus* cals upon *Courcy* and *Poer*, to bring on the foote, who metting with the foote and maine battaile of the Irish (that expected newes from *Odonell*) fought most fiercely: No instrument of Warre could be heard, the cry of both sides pierced the clouds, the gald horses grievously complained, the maimed souldiers groueling on the ground and gasping for breath gave pittifull groanes; the Irish flang darts and stones, the English shoote arrowes, the Irish with sparthes and galloglasse axes, the English with speares and swords encounter on bothsides most valiantly; the splints of broken staves fly about their eares, and

eyes, sparkles of fire from their swords and targets, and the blowes upon their helmets yeelded the sound of hammers working upon anviles; both sides deserved honor and singular commendations; the slaughter was great on both sides, and continued long; many of the English were slaine, and a number of the Irish were left alive, they determined to make an end of the English that day; the rere of the Irish march couragiously, the English had the bog of the one side, and the ditch of the other, and the entrance to them was ful of heads, legs, and armes, dead corps, armor and horses dead, and lying a long striving with death, that they could not approch, whereupon they broke their battaile aray, dispersed themselves, and from the paces entred the plaines. Sir *Amoric* watching his opportunity, called *Ieffrey Montgomery* his sisters sonne and standard bearer, and said: *Have not we quitted our selves like men this day, and shall wee dishonour the field so much as to suffer yonder company to escape our hands; come, advance your Standard, let us wheele about and give the on-set: Montgomery replied, it seemes strange unto mee, to see your stomach passe your strength, we have wonne honour advisedly, and shall we now rashly lose it? of seven score, we have but forty horses left, the rest are wounded, tired and not fit for service: then said Amorich give me the Standard, I will beare it my selfe; if that be your pleasure (saith Mountgomery) you shall not hereafter charge me with cowardise, under this Standard*

have I got honour, and under this Standard (if God so please) I will dye. With this they wheeled about and overtooke the foot of the Irish, being loden with armes, and wearied with fight, with their launces they strooke them to the ground, they gave the onset a fresh upon the horsemen which were about 200. and had *Connor O Laghlin* to their leader, who retreated in battaile array, ready to answer the fight. Sir *Amoricus* in that skirmish was twice vnhorsed, and by his men lift up againe, afterwards in a filthy foord he was unhorsed againe, and his horse slaine under him: whereupon some of his troope lighted, stood very stoutly by him, tooke weapons out of the dead mens hands that lay along the way, & kept the Foord from horse and man, untill Sir *Iohn de Courcy* came to the rescue, at which time many of the Irish were slaine, and the rest fled away: thus in the end God gave the victory unto the English men, after the losse of many a brave man, and especially *Lyonell Saint Laurence,* nephew to *Amoricus,* whose death was greatly lamented. When they had buried their dead, and gathered their armes, they returned to Dune.

The Midsummer following, *Courcy* fought the second battaile nigh the walles of Dune (saith *Stanihurst*) and overthrew fifteene thousand men in Vlster. And saith the booke of *Houth,* after that field, Vlster men had small stomacke to give any onset upon the English men: yet I finde the field to have

beene bloudy of both sides, and that Sir *Amoricus* was sore wounded, laid under a hedge, eating hony suckles for his reliefe, where he left much bloud, and was carried away betweene foure men; his wounds were so many, and so dangerous, that no Physitian or Surgeon could promise life the space of nine dayes, yet in the end, recovered. Next unto him was his sonne Sir *Nicholas Saint Laurence*, a most valiant Knight so sore wounded in nine severall places, that he was once left for dead, but at length recovered, to the great comfort of his friends.

The third battaile that Sir *Iohn de Courcy* fought, was in Ferng, against eleaven thousand Irish men: the occasion was thus, *Courcy* had builded many Castles throughout Vlster, and especially in Fern, where *Mac Mahon* dwelled; this *Mac Mahon* with solemne protestations vowed to become a true and faithfull subiect, gave *Courcy* many gifts, and made him his Goship, which is a league of amitie highly esteemed in Ireland. Whereupon *Courcy* gave him two Castles with their demeanes to hold of him. Within one moneth after, this *Mac Mahon* returning to his vomit, brake downe the Castles, and made them even with the ground. Sir *Iohn de Courcy* sent unto him to know the cause that moved him to fall to this villanie: his answer was, that he promised not to hold stones of him, but the land, and that it was contrary to his nature, to couch himselfe within cold stones, the woods being so nigh, where

he might better warme himselfe, with other slender and scornefull answers. *Courcy* to be revenged of him, saw no better course then to prey his country, mustred his men, entred the land, and swept all the cattell before him. The prey was so great, that it could not be driven, unlesse it were divided into three parts, and to that end, this company in like sort was proportioned betweene the foremost of the voward, and the last of the rereward, there was three miles distance; the paces were narrow, the way miry and boggy, with thicke bushes on either side, the Irish being (as I said before) eleven thousand in number, stood upon all advantages, had their espials upon them, divided themselves likewise, and stept in betweene every of the English companies, and upon a sudden, made such a cry, and gave such a shout, that the woods rang thereof, and the Cowes ranne like divels upon the drivers, and overthrew horse and man, so that there were more slaine and trode under foot in the mire and dirt, of the English men, by the Cowes, then by the sword of the rebels. Vpon this cry, all the Cowes were lost, and the men fell to blowes, where the Irish being acquainted with every blinde way, made better shift then the English, *Courcy* and his brother *Amoricus*, with such as were alive, hastened out of the woods, and came to a Plaine, where they viewed each other some quarter of a mile distant. Sir *Amoric* turned backe, and cast up his eyes, and saw Sir *Roger Poer* that had married his Neece, about a sevenight before, pulled and

halled by the Irish, and carried away prisoner; follow me, saith he unto his company, I will rescue him, or I will dye on the place; he suddenly comming upon their heeles, set upon them, and carried away Sir *Roger Poer;* with that, the Irish gave such a shout, that all the rest of their company that were dispersed and scattered among the bushes, gathered themselves together to that place, to answer the cry, and stept betweene Sir *Amoric* and Sir *Iohn Courcy*, so that with great perill of their lives, and losse of many men, they came together to that place; when they met, they bewailed their losses, and being environed with bogges and marishes, they forsook their horses, and fell to kill them, and shifted for themselves; the Irish most eagerly pursued them, and at length, one *William Lawyard* overtooke *Courcy*, hee with his company turned their faces, fought a cruell fight, wherein (saith mine Author) there were slaine of the Irish men, sixe score. After this skirmish, followed *Arte boy*, with three hundred, and set upon *Courcy*, who slue of the Irish, nine score: last of all, *Mac Mohon*, the ground of all this mischiefe, came blowing, and set upon *Courcy*, with whom the base sonne of Sir *Amoricus* encountred, slue him, and foure-score of his men, and drove the rest to flye; the day being thus spent, the night made an end of that battaile: as the night fell, Sir *Iohn de Courcy* by good hap, lighted upon an old Fort of his owne, moted or trenched about, where there was a good watch kept, he being glad of them, and they of him, camped

there with his forces that night, and the enemy within halfe a mile of them, as it appeared by the great fires they made after their travaile. Sir. *Amoric Saint Laurance* after a short nap or slumber, tooke a few with him, went to espie the enemies campe, and made a speedie returne, he pressed upon his brother *Courcy* and the campe, to wake them, and delivered unto them these speeches: 'I have scouted abroad, 'and spared you in your heavie sleepe; I viewed the 'enemies campe, whom I take to be 5000. strong, 'and that by the scope of their cabbins; wee are but '500. fighting men, all wearied with sore fight, long 'travaile, and somewhat discouraged with hard for-'tune, not fit to make any great enterprize, or to 'performe any worthy exploit; nay a worse matter, 'there are among us such as have deadly wounds, 'but the dead sleep suppresseth their complaints, and 'further, our men watch without sufficient release, 'and the enemy hath his fill every way; our case is 'desperate, if the enemy set upon us to morrow, we 'are not able to withstand him, wee shall be slaine 'every mothers sonne; wherefore I thinke best that 'we now set upon them that are now feasting and 'sleeping, voyd of all feare of us, whom in their opi-'nion, they hold for men quite overthrowne, and 'never able to make a head againe, and that we 'leave some of our sicke men here to ward, and take 'some of the fresh men with us.' When hee had ended his speech, there was silence for a certaine space, wherein one looked upon the other. Then

Sir *Iohn Courcy* spake, I looked all this while for some of these young gallants, and your fellow soul-diers to deliver their courage; but one thing further, Sir *Amoric*, where are their horses bestowed? he answereth, your white horse, and my blacke gelding, I have cunningly conveyed away, and the rest I can point you to with my finger. Then saith Sir *Iohn Courcy*, this is mine advice: Let two men ride these two horses, and gather their horses together, and orderly in each side drive them upon the enemy, all wee in armes will come after, and suddenly give the shout upon them in their sleepes, and serve them with their horses, as they served us with our kine: Every man liked well of this course, and when they came to the place, they had the killing of them at their owne desire. There the English came, victualled, apparelled, armed, and horsed themselves, never better in their lives. Of 5000. Irish, there escaped not above 200. which ranne so fast, (saith mine Author) that a horse could not hold them. Of the English, the day before, 400. men were missing, but in that mornings worke, onely two. Lastly, Sir *Iohn Courcy*, with some hearts ease, returned to his old Fort, where hee had camped that night, rested there a while, and sent to Dublin and elsewhere among his friends, for supplies of men and other necessarie provisions. There are some out of the schoole of envy, with grace, to disgrace *Courcy* (whom I have in part touched before) that report the story otherwise, which deliver not wherein he was to be honoured, but wherein he was foyled, *fortuna de*

la guerra, that hee was driven with eleven persons in armes, to travaile a foot some 30. miles, for the space of two dayes, the enemy still pursuing, (the which they lay not downe) all fasting without any reliefe, untill hee came to an old Castle of his owne, which savoureth not altogether of truth, but forwards with the history.

The fourth battaile that Sir *Iohn Courcy* fought was in Vriell, for this cause: *Courcy* had sent certaine of his servants into England, for victuals, munition, and divers necessaries; the ship was by foule weather driven into a creick in Vriell, cald Torshead; *O Hanlan* with others being acquainted with all circumstances, bord the ship, put men and mariners to the sword, and make a prize and havocke of all: *Courcy* hearing of this, gathered his forces together; draweth towards the Nury to come into Vriell to be revenged of them for this injury; by the way he was given to understand, that all the Irish of those parts were in armes prepared for him in their defence, to justifie their doings, and that they had camped by South of Dundalke, and by North of the river Dondoygon. *Courcy* having marched to a place within a mile and a halfe of the Irish campe, made a stand, cald his brother *Amoric*, Sir *Roger Poer*, with others, and consulted what course was best to be held. Sir *Roger Poer* being full of courage, begins: I thinke best to hold still with us the favour of Fortune; they are many, we are but few, the longer we behold them, the worse wee shall like them;

the souldiers would be set á worke, and the more we linger, the more doubts and buzzes will enter his braine; for often wee see, that the sight maketh, and the sight marreth.

Next, Sir *Amoric* delivereth his opinion: we came not hither to make hasty worke, but advisedly to performe service; true it is, as you have delivered, they are manie we are but few in comparison of their number; afore we give battaile, there are 3. things (as I take it) requisite to be considered, the cause wherefore we fight, the number of both sides, that they be somewhat equally matched, and the place where both joyne battaile together. I would not have any of my speeches drawn to discourage or dismay any valiant mind. To the first, our parentage is knowne, we are no base people, our valour is tryed, our enemy hath the proofe thereof; we come not to steale, but to be revenged of the theeves that murthered our men, & robbed us of our necessary provision. Secondly, where we find our company small, and our side weake, and the ground not fitting us for any advantage, where force cannot further, let policie take place; my advice is that a begger or a Frier shall goe from us to the Irish campe, and informe them, that Sir *Hugh Delacy* came yesternight with a great force, to Drogheda, and that he saw two miles off a great army of horse and foot, somewhat westerly of him, which he supposeth to bee the English Army, that marched all night from Tradaf towards Dundalke; in the meane while, my sonne

Nico: with twenty choice horsemen, together with our lackies and horseboies, for the greater shew upon our hackneis and garrans, shall wheele Westwards on the right hand, that it may concurre with the Fryers tale, and give us a signe what we shall doe, and we will march after to see the event; when the enemy hath discried us, we shall perceive by his stirring what he meanes to doe; if they turne face to us and offer fight, our foot shall recouer Dondalke afore theirs, and with our horses we will so handle the matter, that we shall sustaine no great losse: if they fly and take the river, the sea comes in, we shall overtake them afore halfe passe over. All were well pleased with his device, and followed the direction. *Nico. Saint Laurence* with his company, wheeles before, Sir *Iohn de Courcy* a loofe followeth after, Sir *Roger Poer* takes the rereward; the enemy having discried them takes the river: Sir *Nico.* gave the signe, whereupon the English Army give a great shout and followeth their heeles; the Irish breake their araie, they tumble one upon another in the water: the cariage drowns some, the sea and the swiftnesse of the tyde take others away; such as would not venter the water, were slaine by the English; *Othanlan* and his company that had passed the water, seeing the slaughter of his men, could not come to the rescues, by reason of the salt water: the Englishmen having quitted that place, were directed by the Fryer to a foord on the left hand, where they passed over, and pursued the rest: The Horsemen overtooke the Foot

of the Irish, and skirmished with them, untill Sir *Iohn de Courcy* came by that time; the sea likewise had stopped the Irish from flying, at a great water, a mile from the Lurgan on the Southside of Dundalk. The Irish seeing themselves in this strait, turne their faces, choose rather to dye with the sword like men, then to be drowned in the seas like beasts. There were in that place, some 6000. Irish, and about 1000. English, there was no advantage of ground, it booted not to fly on any side; the coward must in that case try himselfe a man, the fight was sore, no mercy but dead blowes: The foot of the English drew backe, Sir *Iohn de Courcy* their leader, was left in the midst of his enemies with a twohanded sword, washing and lashing on both sides, like a Lion among sheepe (saith my Author) *Nicolas* posteth to his father *Amoric*, that was in chase of the scattred horsemen of the Irish, and cried, alas father, mine uncle Sir *Iohn* is left alone in the midst of his enemies, and the foot have forsaken him; with that Sir *Amoric* lighted, killed his horse and said, here my sonne take charge of these horsemen, and I will lead on the foot company, to the rescue of my brother *Courcy;* come on fellow souldiers saith he, let us live and dye together: He gave the on-set upon the foot of the Irish, rescued Sir *Iohn Courcy* that was sore wounded, and with cruell fight in manner out of breath; with the sight of him, the souldiers take hart and drive the Irish to retreit; the slaughter on both sides was great, few of the Irish and fewer of the English were

left alive: The Irish got them to the Fewes, and the English to Dundalke; but who got the best there is no boast made.

Not long after, Sir *Iohn de Courcy* went into England, where the King in regard of his good service, made him Lord of Conoght and Earle of Vlster; upon his returne (saith *Stanihurst*) which was in the Canicular daies, he fought at the Bridge of Ivora a cruell battaile, and prostrated his enemies, with great honour; and for that I find litle written thereof, I thought good thus lightly to passe it over, as others before me have done: After this he builded many Castles in Vlster, made bridges, mended high wayes, repaired Churches, and governed the Country in great peace, untill the dayes of King *Iohn*, where I shall have further cause to discourse of him.

Amids these tumults in the North, *Miles Cogan* bestirred himselfe, in the West; he passed the Shannon into Conoght with 540. men, where (saith mine Author) never Englishman entred before, whereupon the Conoght men, drove before them, all their cattle into the fastnesses, carried with them as much as they could, fired the rest, with their Townes, Villages, Houses and Cottages. *Milo* marched as far as Tuam, where he rested 8. dayes, and finding man and beast fled, and the Country barren of victualls, he returned towards the Shannon, and by the way met with *Roderic* the Monarch, which lay in ambush with three

Companies waiting his comming: At their meeting, they skirmished a long while, and fought a cruell fight, where the enemy lost many, and *Milo* but three men, then hee passed the river and came safely to Dublin.

*Anno** *William Fitz Adelme*, the Kings Lievtenant is called into England: Hee was a man that did no honour to the King, neither good to the Country, whom every good man in his life time detested, and all Irish Chronicles after his death have defamed. In his roome the King appointed *Hugh Delacy* Deputy of Ireland, and joyned in Commission with him *Robert Poer* Seneschal of Wexford and Waterford.

Not long after, the King sent into Ireland *Miles Cogan* and *Robert Fitz Stephens* with others, and gave them (in regard of their service) all South *Mounster*, to wit the Kingdome of Corke in Fee for ever, to be equally divided betweene them, except the City of Corke, and one Cantred thereunto adjoyning; also he gave unto *Philippe de Bruse* all North *Mounster*, to wit the Kingdome of Lymerick. After they had pacified *Dermot Mac Carty*, Prince of Desmond, quieted the Country, and divided their territories, they conducted *Philippe de Bruse* to Lymerick to take possession of the Kings graunt given him in those parts.

* *The date is not inserted in the original Edition.*

As they came to the walles of Lymerick, the Citizens of spight in sight of them all, to the end that no Englishman should roost there, set the Town on fire. *Philippe de Bruse* was therewith al discouraged, and his Company, in so much that when *Robert Fitz Stephens* and *Miles Cogan*, offred to adventure their lives in the recovery of the Kingdome of Lymerik, with all their aide and assistance; he refused it, and returned with them to Corke, esteeming it farre better to lose Lymric, and with safetie to dwell among his lovers and friends, then to lose life and kingdome by dwelling among such Iewes, as will fire their owne houses, and cut all English throats.

In a while after, *Miles Cogan*, and *Raffe* the sonne of *Robert Fitz Stephens*, who had lately married *Miles* daughter, went towards Lismore to parlee with Waterford men, and determined that night to lodge with one *Mac Tyrid*, who had solemnly invited them. As they waited in the field, expecting the comming of the Waterfordians, this *Mac Tyrid* unawares stealing upon them, most traiterously slue them, and five of their company, whereupon the whole country was in uproare, insomuch that *Dermot Mac Carty*, and all the Irish in those parts, together with *Mac Tyrid*, that most perfidious traitor, were in armes, determining thenceforth to be no longer the Kings loyall subjects; when they had gathered their forces together, they laid siege to Corke, meaning to cut off *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and all the English men there. *Robert*

Fitz Stephens being distressed in Corke, fearing the open enemy without, and mistrustring the secret enemy within, sent post to Wexford, to his nephew *Reimond le Grosse*, praying him to come to his aide. *Reimund* forthwith, with twenty knights, and one hundred foot and bowmen, entred the Lee, landed at Corke, encountred with the enemies, killed some, drove other to flye, and compelled the rest to submit themselves, and sue for peace.

When the King understood of this, he sent *Richard Cogan*, brother unto *Miles*, to supply his brothers roome in the kingdome of Corke, a man no way inferiour to his brother for valour and martiall prowesse; in his companie came *Philip Barry*, and *Girald Barry* his brother, (otherwise called *Silvester Giraldus Cambrensis*, the famous learned man) nephewes of *Robert Fitz Stephens*, with a jolly troupe of horse and foot, chosen and picked men. *Robert Fitz Stephens*, and *Richard Cogan* enjoyed this kingdome of Corke peaceably for certaine yeeres, and in processe of time, for want of heires male of them, it came to two daughters, the one of them was married to *Robert de Carew*, the other to *Patricke de Courcy*, and they in right of their wives, enjoyed the same during their lives, and after them, their heires, untill such time as by a division growne (as I take it in England) betweene the two housss of Yorke and Lancaster, the Irish men expelled them, and recovered the country unto themselues. *Anno* 1178. *The Monasterie, Beatæ Mariæ*

Roseæ vallis, called *Rosglas*, was founded. Yet others thinke it was in *Anno* 1189. I may not forget *Harvey de monte Marisco*, (of whom often mention is made before) who after many spitefull parts, treacheries and false accusations exhibited by him unto the King against most noble servitors, became a Monke: the man was sore troubled in conscience, and in his course he made the common saying true (*desperatio facit Monachum.*) Hee had founded (saith *Felcon*) the Monastery of our blessed Lady, *de Portu Donbrodthi*, he gaue unto the Monasterie Saint *Trinitatis* of Canterbury, his territories & advousons along the sea coast, between Waterford and Wexford, and there cloystred himselfe; I would (saith *Cambrensis*) he had changed his conditions with his habit.

The same yeere (saith *Holinshed*) there came from Pope *Alexander* 3. into England, two Cardinals, *Alberto desuma*, and *Petro de sancta Agatha*, whose commission was to summon the Bishops of England, Ireland, Scotland, with the Isles, and Normandie, to the generall Councell of Lateran in Rome: after they had obtained licence to passe through his dominions, the King swore them upon the holy Evangelist, that in their Legateship they should not attempt any thing that might be hurtfull to the King or his dominions, and that upon their returne, they should visite him homewards: whereupon out of Ireland there went thither, *Laurence*, Archbishop of Dublin, and *Catholicus*, Archbishop of Tuam, with some other five

or sixe Irish Bishops, whom the King likewise swore, that they should not procure any damage to his Realmes and dominions.

The Realme of Ireland at this time was singular well governed by *Hugh de Lacy*, a good man, and a wise Magistrate, who for the good of the land and the people, established many good orders: he made Bridges, and builded Townes, Castles, and Forts, throughout Leinster, as Sir *Iohn de Courcy* did in Vlster in his time; the Priest kept his Church, the Souldier his Garrison, and the Plow-man followed his Plough, yet cankred envy quieted not her selfe, practised mischiefe against him, so that he was charged before the King, to attempt the Crowne of Ireland, and make himselfe absolute Lord of the land, and that he had married the King of Connaghts daughter, (saith *Holinshed)* contrary to the Kings pleasure. The King immediately (as Princes are jealous of great men) called him into England, appointed governours, *Iohn Constable*, and *Richard Peche.* This *Lacy* behaved himselfe so discreetly and dutifully in England, that he cleered himselfe of all suspition, that the King was resolved of his truth and fidelity, and sent him backe againe into Ireland, with further credit then formerly he had done, and that within three moneths, and gave him the absolute command and Lievetenantship of the land, and joyned as assistant unto him, *Robert Salisbury*, calling home the former governours.

It was not long, but he was upon malitious occasion, the second time sent for into England, and one *Philip* of Worcester, (*Cambrensis* is mine Author) a valiant souldier, a bountifull and a liberall man, with a most brave troupe of horse and foot, arrived in Ireland, with command to send over *Hugh de Lacy*, and he to remaine there as Governour of the land, untill *Iohn* his sonne came over. *Stanihurst* is of opinion, that he went over into England, and cleering himselfe, speedily returned againe, which cannot well stand with the course of the history; for when *Philip* of Worcester tooke upon him the governement, *Lacy* hastened the building and finishing of the Castle of Derwath (whereof my penne immediately shall make report) and there ended his dayes. And now to *Philip* of Worcester, and his companion *Hugh Tirell*, *Cambrensis*, and *Stanihurst* especially, write most bitter of them: of *Philip*, how that first of all he resumed and seized unto the Kings use, the lands of *Ocathesie*, and divers other parcels which *Hugh de Lacy* had sold away, and these he appointed to serve for the Kings provision, and the Governours diet. And after the winter was past, he assembled and mustred his men and companie, and began to travaile from place to place. In March about the middle of Lent, he came to Armagh, where he extorted, and perforce exacted from the Clergie there, a great masse of money and treasure, and from thence he went to Dune, and from Dune to Dublin, laden with gold, silver, money, and monies worth, the which he extorted in every place

where he came, and other good did he none. *Hugh Tirell* his fellow scraper, tooke from the poore Priests at Armagh, a great brasse panne or brewing fornace, which served the whole house: see the iust iudgment of God, (the which then was so constraced, as *Cambrensis* hath delivered in his Vaticinall history, and likewise in his topagraphie) *Philip* at the townes end of Armagh, was taken with a sudden pang, and the same so vehement, that it was supposed hee should never have recovered it. When he came to himselfe, a poore man standing by said, *Let him alone, he must have breath till he come to the divell, and then the divell will have him, and all that he extorted from us.* *Hugh Tirell* that carried the panne as farre as Dune, and the Priests curse withall, in night time had his lodging set on fire, where house, and houshold-stuffe, and all that he had there, was consumed to ashes, together with the horses that drew the same (and so no thankes to him) he left it behinde him for lacke of carriage. The Castles which *Lacie* builded for the good of the Land, were these. First, Laghlen, of old called the Blacke Castle, upon the Barrow betweene Ossory and Idrone, of which Castle by *Henry* 2. commandment, *Robert Poer* had the charge, untill in cowardize sort he gave over the same, and forsooke it; whereupon *Cambrensis* then living, maketh this invective: O what worthy Champions and fit men for martiall feates, were this *Poer* and *Fitz Adelme*, to inhabit and command such a nation as is destitute of noble and valiant mindes? but a man may espie the

variable sleight of fortune, disposed to smile at foolery, how from the base dunghill, hee advanceth to high dignities: for why? they two had more pleasure in chambering, wantonnesse, playing with young girles, and on the Harpe, then in bearing of shield, or wearing of Armour: but in sooth it is to bee admired, that so noble a Prince as *Henry* 2. is, would send such cowards to command, or to direct in place of service. But to the history. This blacke Castle now called New Leighlin, for difference of Old Leighlin, which is the Bishops seate, standeth in the Barony of Ydrone, which was the antient inheritance of the *Carews:* who being Barons of Carew in Wales, so farre as I can learne, one of them married the daughter and heire of the Barron of Ydrone, and so the *Carewes* became, and were for the terme of many yeeres, Barons of Ydrone, untill the troublesome time of *Richard* 2. when the *Carewes* with all the English of Ireland, in manner were driven to forsake the land. He builded in Leix for *Meilerius Tachmeho, alias Cachmehe,* and as for *Kildare,* with the country adjoyning, the which, as *Cambrensis* writeth, was by Earle *Strangbow* given him, the Governours in *Hugh de Lacy* his absence, subtilly tooke it away from him, under colour of exchange, and gave him Leix, a wilde savage country, with woodes, paces, bogges, and rebels farre from succour or rescue. In *Meth,* he builded Clanarec, Dunach killar, *alias* Killairie, the Castle of *Adam de Ieypon, alias sureport,* and *Gilbert de Nugents* of

Delvyn. In Fotheret of Onolan, *alias* Fethred Onolan, in Latin, *Rotheric*, he builded a Castle for *Reimond*, and another for *Griffin* his brother, the sonnes of *William Fitz Girald*, for *Walter* of Ridensford, he builded in Omorchu, *alias Moroghs* country Trisseldermot, otherwise called Trisdeldermot, about five five miles from Caterlogh, and likewise Kilka, in the country of Kildare. For *Iohn de Hereford*, he builded a Castle in Collach, otherwise called Tulacfelmeth: for *Iohn declawsa, alias Clavill*, he builded a Castle upon the Barrow, not farre from Leighlin, now supposed to be Carlogh, though some attribute it to *Eva*, Earle *Strangbow* his wife; yet it is evident next after the Danes, that the English men builded all the Castles of Ireland. He builded also neere Aboy, a Castle that he gave to *Robert Bigaret*, another not farre from thence, which he gave to *Thomas Fleminge*, another at the Narach on the Barrow, for *Robert Fitz Richard;* lastly, he builded the Castle of Derwath, where he made a tragicall end; for on a time when each man was busily occupied, some lading, some heaving, some playstering, some engraving, the Generall also himselfe digging with a Pickaxe, a desperate villaine among them, whose toole the Lord Lievetenant used, espying both his hands occupied, and his body bent downewards, with an axe, cleft his head in sunder; his body the two Archbishops, *Iohn* of Dublin, and *Mathew* of Cashill, buried in the Monasterie of the Bectie, that is, *in Monasterio Beatitudinis*, and his

head in Saint *Thomas* Abbey at Dublin, whose death (I read in *Holinshed)* the King was not sorry of, for he was alwayes jealous of his greatnesse.

Vpon the death of *Lacy*, Sir *Roger le Poer* a most worthy Knight, who served valiantly in Vlster, in company with Sir *Iohn de Courcy*, being made Governour of the country about Leighlen in Ossorie, was in most lamentable sort traiterously slaine; and upon that occasion, there was (saith *Cambrensis)* a privy conspiracy over all Ireland against English men: But gentle Reader, I must backe a little, to bring on the yeeres to concurre with the history.

Anno 1180. The Monastery *De Choro Benedicti*, and of *Ieripont* was founded. The same yeere dyed *Laurence* Archbishop of Dublin (whose life foraine Writers, as *Surius*, *Baronius*, *Molanus*, and *Leppelo* with others have written) his father hight *Maurice*, his mother *Iniabre principis filiâ*, a great Commander in Leinster; the Martyrologe of *Sarum* saith he was bastard: This *Maurice* being at continuall warres with *Dermot Mac Morogh* King of Leinster, upon a league of amity concluded betweene them, delivered unto him for pledge his youngest sonne *Laurence; Dermot* sent him to a desert solitary place and barren soile to be kept, where he was like to perish with famine: *Maurice* hearing thereof, tooke 12. of *Dermots* principall followers, clapt them in prison, and sent *Dermot* word, that hee would cut off their heads, unlesse he

would release and send him his sonne out of that slavish and miserable servitude: *Dermot* released the youth, and delivered him not to his father, but to the Bishop of Glandelogh, and the Bishop charged his Chaplen with his bringing up; the Chaplen trained him up so vertuously, that in a short time after he was made Abbot of Glandelogh, & shortly after that againe, upon the death of *Gregory* Archbishop of Dublin, he was chosen to succed him. So holy a man was he, as some of mine Authors doe write, that he caused one of his men to whippe him twice a day, belike he had deserved it in his youth. His Legend reporteth that in time of famine and scarcity in Ireland, he releeved daily 500. persons at his doore for 3. yeres space. *Henry* the 2. did not favour him, for he had both in publicke and private at sundry times (as formerly in part hath beene touched) beene an instrument of rebellion and of many mischiefes against the English nation, and at the Councell of *Lateran*, contrary to his Oath, inveighed bitterly against the King; *Stanihurst* excuseth him, saying, that hee pleaded for the immunities of the Churches of Ireland, somewhat prejudiciall to the Kings prerogative. He came to the King at Canterbury, where the Monkes received him with solemne Procession, and hee gave himselfe one whole night to prayers before Saint *Thomas* his shrine, for good successe in his affaires with the King: A foole espied him in his Pontificall weed, wholly devoted to Saint *Thomas Becket:* And said, *I can doe no better deed then to make him equall with Saint*

Thomas; with that tooke a club, ranne through the throng, and gave him such a blow upon the pat, that the blood ran downe his eares; the man was so sore wounded, that it was thought hee would streighway yeeld up the Ghost; the cry was up, the foole runne away, the Bishop taking breath called for water, and in a short time after was healed: his sute unto the King was, (as foraigne Writers deliver) for *Deronog* King of Ireland; but saith *Holinshed,* which is likeliest to bee true, it was in the behalf of *Roderic* King of Conoght, which had often promised true subjection and fidelity unto the King, but never performed; he had brought with him *Roderic* his sonne as a pledge for performance of covenants, formerly passed betweene them; as the payment of tribute and such like; but the King neither liked the one or the other, but charged the Archbishop not to depart without his licence.

The King shortly after tooke shipping at Sandwich and sailed into Normandy. The Archbishop followed him, and there dyed of an Ague; whereupon (as *Holinshed* writeth) the King sent *Ieffray De Haile,* one of his Chaplens and a Chaplen also of *Alexander* the Popes Legat into Ireland, to seize the Archbi. see into his hands, and further it is alleaged, that being the Popes Legate of Ireland; he abhorred incontinency so much, that for augmentation of penance, hee would absolve no dissolute Priest, but sent them to Rome for absolution; and proved in regard of former favours,

there, *Amicus Curiæ*, so that he sent thither out of Ireland at one time, 140. Priests, saith the Legend, *De peccato Luxuriæ convictos Romam misit absolvendos;* convicted of Lechery: Behold gentle Reader, the holy lives of the Priests of that age, and the Sanctity of the Romane Sea, in pardoning of them all, *propter quid, alias propter quas.* Pope *Honorius* the 3. *Anno Pontificatus* 9. *vel* 10. Canonized this *Laurence* for a Saint, who is Calendred the 14. of *November*, or as the Bull of his Canonization hath, the 18. of the Calends of *December*, which is all one; the which Bull followeth in these words.

Honorius Episcopus, servus servorum Dei, universis Christi fidelibus, in Rothmugensi Provincia constitutis salutem, & Apostolicam benedictionem. Ineffabilis providentia Dei congruentibus singulis quibusq; temporibus ordinariè, dispensans in splendoribus Sanctorum Ecclesiam suam, quasi ex utero genuit Deum, in exordio ipsius nascentis Ecclesiæ crebro miraculorum fulgore æbstupefaciens gentes, ac prodestinatos in Fide generans Iesu Christi, Cujus hoc fieri nomine & virtute videbant, ipsos filiorum adoptionis numero aggregavit. Deinde crescrute numero & multitudine populi vocati de tenebris, ambulantes juxta Isaiæ Vaticinium in lumine Domini Dei sui, mirabilis dispensator in pluviam fulgura sua fecit, dum signis suis & miraculis (quæ non erant jam fidelibus necessaria) intermissis, super novos populos pastores qui eos pascerent scientia & doctrina . . . . . sicut per os Ieremiæ

promiserat, suscitavit Doctores Ecclesiæ; qui terram cordis fidelium imbre doctrinæ complerent, & extirpatis sensibus vitiorum eum ad proferendum virtutum germen & fructum boni operis fœcundaret. Cæterum quia Charitate frigescente ab exercitio boni operis, torpet Catholicus; errore devio abducente, delirat hæreticus; cecidit velamine adhuc super cor permanente, Iudæus; & in tenebris ambulat fide lucis nondum sibi oriente, Paganus: Misericors Dominus qui neminem vult perire signa interdum innovat, & miseratus immutat ex numero illorum quos in Ecclesia triumphante glorificat aliquorum fidem et merita in militante miraculis declarando, ut per ea Catholici mentis..... discusso ad boni operis excitentur instantiam, hæretici errore dimisso ab isto reducantur ad viam veritatis et vitam.

Sanctæ ergo memoriæ Laurentio Dublinensi Archiepiscopo, apud Ecclesiam Sanctæ Mariæ de Ango Rathmagensis Diocesos, ubi corpus ejus feliciter requiescit, divino munere coruscante miraculis; Venerabilis frater noster Archiepiscopus, et dilecti filij Capitulum Rathmagense, una cum Abbate et Conventu Ecclesiæ supradictæ, multisq; alijs Archiepiscopis et Episcopis, Abbatibus et Religiosis viris, ejus venerabilis vitæ, insignia coruscantia miracula, suis nobis literis intimantes humiliter supplicarunt ut ipsum Sanctorum Catalogo ascribere curaremus; quatenus autoritate (sicut convenit) Apostolica, dignus honor illi exhiberetur in terris, qui (sicut claris signis et evi-

dentibus argumentis apparet) honoratur in cœlis. Licet igitur quos divina honorat dignatio, humana devotio prompto affectu debeat honorare, volentes in hujusmodi negotio secundum consuetudinem Apostolicæ sedis, maturitate debita procedere; præfato Archiepiscopo & Decano & Thesaurario Rathmagensi, dedimus in mandatis ut superdicti viri vita & miraculis inquirerent diligentissime veritatem, & eam nobis fideliter intimarent, ut ea planè comperta pro supplicantium desiderio securius annuere valeremus. Ipsi autem mandatum nostrum cum diligentia exequentes quod de prefati viri conversatione ac vita istis certificare nequibant, eo quod per partes illas transjectus faciens, in Ecclesia prædicta correptus infirmitatis decubuit & infra octavum ab hac luce migravit diem, scripserunt venerabili fratri nostro Archiepiscopo Dublinensi ut veritatem super hoc inquisitam iis per suas literas intimaret, qui citra mare Hibernicum illustris Regis Anglorum negotiis occupatus & volens id inquirere per se ipsum, venerabili fratri nostro Darensi Episcopi suffragano suo, ac Priori Sanctæ Trinitatis Dublinensis commisit in hujusmodi negotio vices suas, ac demum literas eorum, sanctitatem vitæ & conversationis sæpe dicti viri plenius continentes suò & ipsorum sigillis munitas destinarunt eisdem, quas una cum depositionibus testium super miraculis captorum nobis cum sigillus propriis transmiserunt. Colligimus vero ex earum serie litterarum, quod sæpe dictus vir Regis & Reginæ Hiberniæ filius extitit, & ab infantia Sacris Litteris eruditus, senilem gessit in juventute gravita-

tem & mundanarum illecebras vanitatum à se ultra quam ætas illa solebat, abdicavit. Deinde in Archiepiscopum Dublinensem assumptus, sic de virtute in virtutem profecerit, ut in oratione assiduus, austerus in maceratione proprii corporis, ac in Eleemosinarum largitione profusus, se totaliter Domino dedicarit.

Per depositionem verò testium predictor: constitit evidenter sanctam vitam ejusdem esse tot sequentibus miraculis comprobatam quæ non parvam texerent historiam si quis vellet ea singula scribere seriatim: sed ut non prætermittamus claudi gressum, cæci visum, surdi auditum, muti loquelam, leprosi mundationem & varijs afflicti languoribus sanitatem ad invocationem ejus nominis, & ea sola quæ inter cætera emicuerunt miracula breviter perstringamus. Nam idem sanctus, (imo Deus ob ipsius merita gloriosa) septem mortuos (quorum quatuor triduani erant) mirificè suscitavit. De ipsius sanctitate tantis certificati miraculis, divinumque secuti judicium, quod eius glorificatio nobis tam evidentibus innotuit argumentis, eundem sanctiss. Catalogo sanctorum adscripsimus & annumerandum decrevimus, sanctorum Collegio Confessorum ac inter eos Christi fidelibus venerandum statuentes, ut ejus veneranda festivitas de cetero annis singulis decimo octavo Kalendas Decembris solemniter celebretur. Monemus igitur universitatem vestram, & hortamur in Domino quatenus Deum devotis mentibus collaudantes & studentes proficere tantæ virtutis exemplo, ejusdem gloriosissimi Confessoris apud Deum suf-

fragia humiliter imploret. Nos autem de Dei omnipotentis misericordia & beatorum Petri & Pauli authoritate confisi, omnibus vere penitentibus & confessis qui ad prefatam Ecclesiam, in die solemnitatis ejusdem gloriosissimi confessoris vel infra Octabis cum devotione accesserint ejus orationum suffragia petituri 20. *dies de iniunctis sibi penitentijs miserecorditer relaxamus. Dat.* 3. *Idus Decembris pontifitatus nostri anno decimo.*

Molanus writeth of this *Laurence*, that he favoured Monkes greatly, and hearing of the fame of the 28. Monasteries of Aroatia, in the confines of Atrebatum in the low Countries, made the secular Priests called Cannons in Dublin, become regular cannons, according unto the order of Aroatia. After his discease, *Iohn Comin*, an English man, a Monke of Evesham (an Abbey in England) by the Kings direction, was made Archbishop of Dublin, confirmed by Pope *Lucius* at Viterbium, and also made a Cardinall (so writeth *Cambrensis*) *Anno* 1148. the Monasterie *legis dei*, that is, of Leix, was founded, *Anno* 1185. *Iohn*, the fift sonne of *Henry* 2. of the age of twelve yeeres, landed at Waterford in the Realme of Ireland, from the first arrivall of his father, thirteene yeeres, from the first landing of Earle *Stranghow*, fourteene yeeres, and from the first entrance of *Robert Fitz Stephens*, fifteene yeeres. In the Chronicles of England I finde, that *Anno* 1177. in a Parliament held at Oxford, *Henry* 2. created his sonne *Iohn*, King of Ireland.

In *Anno* 1185. he dubbed his sonne *Iohn*, Knight, and set him in a readinesse for Ireland, sending the new Bishop *Iohn* of Dublin, as his precurser thither for all things necessarie. Item the same yeere he obtained of Pope *Vrban* 3. a licence to crowne which hee would of his sonnes, King of Ireland, and for reformation thereof, sent him a crowne of Peacocks tayles, I would say feathers, after a feat manner woven in with gold; lastly, how that *Vrban* 3. sent two Legates, *Octavianus*, a subdeacon Cardinall, and *Hugh de Novant* from the Court of Rome, to crowne *Iohn*, King of Ireland, but *Henry* 2. delayed it so, that it was not effected; hereof (as I suppose) it riseth that oftentimes we finde him called King *Iohn* afore he was crowned: but to the Irish history. At the first landing and entring of the Kings sonne at Waterford, a great many of the chiefest commanders in those parts, who since their first submission unto King *Henry*, continued faithfull and true, being advertised of this his arrivall, came and resorted unto him in peaceable manner after their best manner, to salute him and congratulate his comming, one made curtesie, another kneeled, some tooke him by the hand, other some offer to kisse him. The new gallants and Normans, such as had not beene before acquainted with the country, neither the homelinesse of the people, set them at nought, laughed at their Mantles and Troosses, derided their glibbes and long beards, one takes a sticke, and pats the Irish man on the pate, another halls the mantle, and pricks him

behinde with a pinne, some have their glibbes and long beards pulled, and departing, have flappes on the lippes, thumpes in their neckes, and the doores clapt on their heeles, with diuers other abuses, and undiscreet entertainement. These men (not without cause) being mightily displeased, shifted themselves out of the towne, and in all haste got them home. And from thence (saith *Cambrensis*) with their wives, children, and houshold, departed, and went some to the Prince of Lymeric, some to the Prince of Corke, some to *Roderic*, Prince of Connaght, and so some to one Lord, and some to another; and to these they declared orderly, how they had beene at Waterford, and what they had seene there, and how they were evill intreated, and that a yong man was come thither, guarded with beardlesse boyes, and guided by the councels of young men, in whom there was no stay, no sobriety, no stedfastnesse, no assurednesse, whereby they and their country might be secured of any safety.

These Princes, and namely they three of Connaght, Corke, and Lymeric, who were the chiefest, and who were then preparing themselves in a readinesse to have come and salute the Kings Sonne, and to have yeelded unto him their dutifull obeysance, as faithfull subiects; when they had heard these newes, they began forthwith to bethinke themselves, that of such evill beginning, a worse ending would ensue: wherefore with one consent, they concluded to stand and

ioyne together against the English nation, and to their uttermost power, to adventure their lives, and to stand to the defence of their country and liberties, and for the performance thereof, they enter into a new league among themselves, and swore each to other, and by that meanes, enemies before, are now become friends, and reconciled, as of old, *Ephraim* against *Manasses*, and *Manasses* against *Ephraim*, and both against the Tribe of *Iuda*. *Herod* against *Pilate*, and *Pilate* against *Herod*, both become friends to crucifie Christ. To be short, there followed a generall revolt and rebellion over all Ireland. *Cambrensis* alledgeth a second cause of this revolt. How that when *Robert Fitz Stephens* first entred the land, there were certaine Irish men which tooke part with him, served faithfully, and were as reason required, rewarded for their service, and had for recompence, certaine lands given them, which they quietly held, and peaceably enioyed, untill the comming of the Kings sonne, then new commers wanting both living and governement, had it given them to furnish them in their foolish prodigalitie, so that these Irish men flying unto the enemies, became not onely enemies, but were espials upon the English, and conductors of the enemy against them. A third reason of ill successe, *Cambrensis* urgeth against England; first, how that the Britaines or Cambrians (so he termeth them) entring this land, and breaking the ice to the conquest of Ireland, were afterwards by *William Fitz Adelme*, and others, envied, and every way maligned:

secondly, how that the English commanding the land, were by the English disgraced, and one often times articling, accusing, and disgracing one another: thirdly, how that the Normans comming in place, overthrew all, for the King being borne beyond the seas, affected them most, they were of his Councell at home in time of peace, and made Commanders abroad in time of warres; these comming with the Kings sonne into Ireland, were fine in their apparrell, delicate mouthed, feeding upon dainties, they could not disgest their meat without Spice and Wine at every meale; they could not endure the service in the Marches and borders, they would not remaine in remote places, they brooked not the Forts, Holds, and Garrison places; but liberty they liked of, so it were in a walled town; a warme chamber, a Ladies lappe, a soft bed, a furre gowne, and their Lords sides to guard and attend, pleased them well; they would talke and bragge of service, sweare and stare at home, stand upon the pantofles of their reputation, disdaine others, and especially the Irish, and durst not shew their faces in the field. These were they that gave themselves to command the Irish, that would not be commanded by them, they polled, pilled, extorted, and what not.

In the space of eight moneths that Earle *Iohn* staied in Ireland, I finde that he built three Castles, Tibrach, Lismoore, and Archfinan, *alias* Ardsivin: at Ardsivin upon Midsummer day, (so *Cambrensis*

reporteth) the Prince of Lymeric bent and animated to rebellion, slue foure Knights, and the greater part of the Garrison there: shortly after, the same rebels of Lymric, by a slight, drew out the Garrison to seize upon a prey, and lying in ambush, killed many of them, but these revolters escaped not scotfree in all the parts of the land: for at this time when the Irish men of Kennally with great forces had entred Meth, killing, burning, spoiling, and preying the Country. *William le Petit*, Governour or Iusticer (saith *Cambrensis*) drew a head against them, rescued the prey, put them to flight, made a great slaughter of them, and sent a hundred heads of the principall of them to Dublin.

The Kings sonne hearing of these troubles, hastned away unto England, left the land tumultuous, troublesome & al upon an uprore; committed the charge thereof (saith *Stanihurst*) *Bruseo, Courceo, Giraldidis, &c. in primis Hugonis Lacæi virtuti*, where in truth I find no such matter, for *Cambrensis* (herein whom I must relie unto) being then in Ireland with the Kings son, reporteth how that *Henry* the second, hearing of the course which these greene heads held in Ireland; thought good to call them all unto England, and send thither no more such young commanders, and by the advice of his Councell committed the charge and absolute command thereof, unto Sir *Iohn de Courcy*, whom hee appointed Lord Lievtenant of Ireland (the Booke of *Houth* also testifieth the

same.) Earle *Iohn* immediately gathered forces, travailed over the whole land, pacified for the time *Corke, Tumound and Conoght,* From the death of *Hugh Delacy,* who was slaine, *Anno* 1186. unto the time; *Hugh Delacy* the yonger came to be Lord Iustice, of whom hereafter more at large. Here gentle Reader, *Cambrensis* leaveth us, who most faithfully continued the affaires of Ireland, some 30. yeeres and odde: he was by father a *Barry,* by mother a *Gerraldin,* nephew to *Morice Fitz Gerald* and *Robert Fitz Stephens,* that first entred to the Conquest of Ireland; hee was born in Pembrok-shire, and was Archdecon of Saint *Davids* and *Brechnoc,* and diversly imployed by *Henry* the second, in whose time, among others, the first Conquerors & his kindred; he came into Ireland againe, and became Tutor unto *Iohn* the Kings sonne, and accompanied him into Ireland; he wrote many learned workes, and among other, the Conquest of Ireland, the Topography of Ireland, and *Mirabilia Hiberniæ.* Whereof hee dedicated one unto *Richard* Earle *Strangbow,* and another unto *Henry* the second; he was elected Archbishop of Saint *Davids,* but at Rome he was out-bid, by him that had more money, and missed the Cushin; hee departed this life, when hee was about foure score yeeres old, and resteth at Saint *Davids.* Yet one thing further of him which he reporteth of himselfe, how that he at the time of his being in Ireland, had Conference with *Mathew Archbishop of Cashill,* and he saying among other things: You have many

Saints in Ireland, but I doe not find any martyr amongst you: the Bishop taking it in ill part, as spoken in derision of the Nation, answered with great anger, Sir, it is so that our people is rude, savage and barbarous, yet there is none so brutish and bloudy, as to lay violent hands upon a Priest, now it fals out that wee are to be governed by such a Nation as is not guiltlesse of Prelats deaths, and it is like, (if it stands with Gods pleasure) that shortly we shall make up a number of Irish martyrs: this he spitefully spake, meaning the death of *Thomas* of Canterbury.

In a while after that Sir *Iohn de Courcy* had brought the whole land to a good passe, and pacified the Irish tumults (this I finde in the Booke of *Houth*) Sir *Hugh Delacy* the younger is sent over into Ireland as Lord Iustice, to take the absolute Command of the Realme. He had no sooner landed but he sent very imperious letters unto Sir *Iohn de Courcy,* to discharge him, and all that were authorized by him of their places, and command, and in like sort (like the green heads spoken of a little before, which landed with Earle *Iohn*) they braved it out, disdained old experimented souldiers, and offered sundry disgraces unto the rest of the English; so that thereof rose much heartburning, division, quarrels and bloody brawles. The Irish seeing this sudden alteration, this division among the English, this undiscreet government, thought now to find fit opportunity publikely to release themselves of that, which they had

oft secretly intended; by their runnagades they summoned at a day a place, all the Chieftaines of Irish birth to a parlee; where after many doubts debated, many griefes opened, they concluded with full resolution to invade all the English, and roote them wholly out of the land; and first they swoare to bee true one to another, throughout that whole rancke of rebels, as farre as life, lands, and goods would reach to effect this enterprise: Secondly, they swoare never to yeeld obedience to the English nation againe.

Oconor King of Conaght becomes the mouth of the Irish, perswades to his liking, disswades where fancy pleaseth not, and gathered together in short time, an Army (as mine Author saith) of 20000. fighting men; his policy was first, to cleare Conoght, and afterwards all Vlster, and so by degrees the whole land, the which he doubted not of, as he delivered to his followers. Sir *Iohn de Courcy* understanding this, and doubting what hee should finde at Sir *Hugh Delacies* hands, sent letters in post to his brother Sir *Amorick Saint Laurence* who shortly to his ayd marched towards the North, with 30. Knights and 200. foot. *Oconor* hearing this, lyeth in ambush in most secret wise, and sendeth scouts of horse and foot before him, to apprehend and cut off all espials, which might bewray his ambush, and give intelligence to Sir *Amorick* to prevent the danger; Sir *Amorick* boldly marcheth on, misdoubting nothing, for that he understandeth by his espials nothing to the con-

trary, till he came to the Divels mouth; where upon a sudden, beholding *Oconor* and his huge Army peeping out of their ambush, was amazed, made a stand, and consulting with his company, wist not what to doe; there was no flying, there was no fighting, one to a hundred was no equal match; a horseman whose name was *Mountgomery*, in a few words said this. Let us fly and save our lives, as for the foot company wee can doe them no good by fighting; by flying and saving our owne lives, we may succour their wives, children and kindred. By that time Sir *Amorick* his brother (leader of the foot company) came to the consultation, and said, I see by all circumstances, that you meane to flie, and you Sir *Amorick* my noble brother, what meane you to give eare to these cowardly horsemen, will you leave us here as sheepe in the mouths of this mercilesse people, and ravening wolfes, ready to rent us in peeces? Have you forgotten the bloody battels we followed you in? and do you not see that we have left our Country, our wives, our children and dearest friends, and now stand at deaths doore, to be forsaken of you whom wee never left so disolate and distressed: if you weigh not our lamentable estate, regard your owne honour, and the house you are descended of. Will you lose in an houre, the honour you wanne in many yeeres? Call to remembrance, most worthy Knight, how that in Vriell in manner in the like distresse; you dismounted your selfe, slew your horse, led the foot, animated the company, recovered your selfe, and ended with

honour? Wee are your flesh and your blood, wee come hither to fight, to live and to dye together; I know the worst; I am resolved, if we fight we dye, if we fly we are slaine; is it not better for us to dye in fight like men, and so winne honour, then to bee slaine in flight like beasts, and gaine shame for ever? With this Sir *Amorick* turned him to the foot company, and hardly gathering breath with the sorrow of his heart, resolved himselfe thus: I have no power to fly and leave my frinds, my flesh and blood, in this extreme distresse. I will live with them, who for my sake came hither, if it so please God, and I will dye with them, if it bee his pleasure, that ending here wee shall meet againe bodies and soules at the last day, God and the World beare witnesse, that wee doe as Christian Knights ought to doe, I yeeld my soule into Gods hands, my body to returne whence it came, my service to my naturall Prince, my heart to my wife and brother, Sir *Iohn de Courcy*, my might, my force and bloody sweat to the ayd of you all that are in the field: He lighted, kneeled upon his knees, kissed the crosse of his sword, ranne his horse through, saying thou shalt never serve against mee, that so worthily hast served with mee. The like did all the rest; then looking about with a chearefull countenance, as if he had not beene the man, that was formerly dismaid, charged two young Gentlemen of the company to get them to the top of an Hill, hard by adjoyning, and beholding the battell, upon their returne homwards make true report to his bro-

ther *Courcy* and others of that daies service. Immediatly they prepared to battaile, the enemies marvailed, seeing them approch, that they durst (being so few) abide the field; they made likewise a stand, and cast doubts, whether the Englishmen in this attempt had not some great supply; rescues are maine battaile following after, they would not give the on-set, before they had certain knowledge thereof, by scoutes and espials: to be short, they joyne the battaile, where to deliver the whole in few words; Sir *Amorick* was slaine and all his company. It was a bloody day, when all the one side, and a 1000. of the other side, fell to ground. *Oconor* and his company seing the end of this field, durst never againe give battell unto the English, but sued to Sir *Hugh Delacy* then Lord Iustice for peace, which he obtained, vowing, as he had many a time before, faith, truth and perfect subjection: This *Oconor* after his reconciliation made report unto Sir *Hugh Delacy*, of that daies work, that he thought verily, there was never the like seen upon the earth; how that the Englishmen not being able to stand in fight, turned backe to backe, with sparthes and two handed swords, untill the last man was slaine. The lamentation that Sir *Iohn de Courcy* made, when this was bruted abroad, I will not stand to rehearse.

I am now to end with King *Henry* the second, a most worthy Prince, whose troubles every way troubled not him so much, as the unnaturall rebellion of his sonnes, and the Iealousie of his Queene; he raigned

34. yeeres, 9. months and two dayes: his Epitaph in *Mathew Paris* and in others I find thus.

Rex Henricus eram, mihi plurima regna subègi,
Multiplicique modo Duxque Comesque fui: &c.

Of late King *Henry* was my name,
Which Conquered many a Land;
And divers Dukdomes did possesse,
And Earldomes held in hand,
And yet while all the earth could scarce
My greedy mind suffice;
Eight foot within the ground now serves
Wherein my Carcas lyes.
Now thou that readest this, note well
My force, with force of Death;
And let that serve to shew the state
Of all that yeeldeth breath:
Do good then here, fore slow no time,
Cast off all worldly cares;
For brittel world full soone doth faile,
And death doth strike unwares.

Richard the first, the third sonne of *Henry* 2. began his raigne over England the 6. of *Iuly*, *Anno* 1189. For his valence, he was called *Cœur de Lyon*, the Lyons heart; he was affianced, but never married to *Adela*, or *Alice*, daughter to the French King, and in his iourney to the holy land, he tooke to wife in the Ile of Cyprus, the Lady *Berengaria*, daughter to *Gar-*

sias (some say *Sanctius*) King of Nauarre, and died without issue; when he had raigned nine yeeres, nine moneths, and two and twenty dayes. It is noted by the Antiquaries, that upon the death of his father, he had three notable windfals, the first was the Crowne of England, the second was his fathers treasure, which he found at Salisbury, amounting to nine hundred thousands pound in coyne, besides Plate, precious stones, Iewels, and apparell; lastly, in the Coffers of Ieffrey *Ridley*, Bishop of Elye, who dyed intestate, he found towards his coronation 3260. pound in silver, five markes in gold, which was better; for his coronation was most Royall. *Iohn Comyn* Archbishop of Dublin was at it. *Mathew Paris* in Latine, and *Holinshed* in English have penned it verbatim. *Will.* K. of Scots did him homage, and when he was the second time crowned King, bare a sword before him. King *Richard* the first yeere of his raigne, gave the Lady *Isabell*, sole daughter and heire of *Richard*, surnamed *Strangbow*, Earle of Penbroke, to *William Maxfield*, Lord *Maxfield*, and Earle Marshall of England, *Anno* 1189.

This *William*, his surname was not *Marshall*, as Sir *Iohn Plunket* his collection hath laid downe, but *Maxfield*, his descent I finde thus; with *William* the Conquerour, there came into England to his ayde, one *Walter Maxfield*, a Norman, that was his Marshall; this *Walter* had issue, *William*, *William* had issue, *Walter*, *Walter* had issue, *Iohn*, *Iohn* had issue, this

William Maxfield, that married *Isabell*, the daughter of *Strangbow*, who was made Earle Marshall of England, Earle of Penbroke in Wales, and Prince of Leinster in Ireland, in the right of his wife. This *William* was in great favour with King *Richard* the first, that gave him the Lady *Isabell* to wife, and honoured him so at his coronation, that he bare a regall Scepter before the King, in the top whereof was set a Crosse of gold, and when the King with full determination passed over into Normandie, and from thence into the Holy Land, he assigned him the third governour of the Realme, *Iohn* Earle of Morton, *Anno* 1199. after the death of his brother *Richard*, sent this *William* among others into England, to set all things in a readinesse for his coronation, the which being the 27. of May, and yeere aforesaid, gave him his full creation to the Earledome of Penbroke, and girded him with the sword; not long after, King *Iohn* sent him with others, as Embassadors to the French King, with sundry other imployments; he was also in great favour with *Henry* 3. as shall be shewed when I come to his raigne. He had five sonnes, and five daughters, his sonnes all succeeded him in the Earldome of Penbroke, and office of Marshalsie, together with the Principality of Leinster, and dyed all without issue. The daughters were all honourably matched in the life time of their father and brethren, and had his territories and possessions in Wales and Ireland, orderly divided among them, the which they and their posterity peaceably enioyed. This *William* Earle Marshall the elder, came to Ire-

land, *Anno* 1207. hee builded the Castle of Kilkenny, and gave the towne a Charter, with priviledges which they enjoy to this day: hee founded there also the Monasterie of the blacke Fryers, and ended the way of all flesh at London, *Anno* 1220. and lyeth buried in the temple of his Lady *Isabell* at Tinterne in Wales, ..

William Marshall his eldest sonne succeeded him, both in the office of Marshall, and Earldome of Penbroke and Ogie, and Principalitie of Leinster; he granted a Charter to the towne of Kilkenny, *Anno* 1223. sixt of Aprill, with the testate of *Thomas Fitz Antony*, Lord of Thomastowne, Seneschall, of Leinster, Fulkoe, Carnac; *Walter Pursell, William Grace, Haman Grace, Amnar Grace,* and others, he ended his dayes at Kilkenny, *Anno* 1231. and resteth in the Monastery there, which his father had formerly founded.

Againe, of this *William* I have seene another Charter, exemplified *Anno* 1329. by King *Edward* the third, with an *inspexim*. *Edwardus Dei gratia Rex Angliæ, Dominus Hiberniæ, Dux Aquitanie omnibus Ballivis & Ministris omnium villarum & villatorum Lagenie & ceteris quibuscunque deijsdem partibus salutem. Supplicavit nobis superior et communitas villæ de Kilkenny quod cum Willielmus nuper Comes Mariscallus et Pembrochie (tempore quo idem Comes extiterat Domini totius terræ Lageniæ) concesserit Burgensibus et Communitati ville predicte qui pro*

tempore fuerint, diversas libertates, inter quas videlicet, quod ipsi in perpetuum per totam Lageniam terram, & potestatem in suam tam villa quam alibi essent quieti de theulonio, lastagio, poritagio, & de omnibus aliijs consuetudinibus quibuscunque, quam quidem cartam inspeximus, &c. Teste Iohannne Darcy Iusticiario nostro Hibernie apud Kilkenny, 8. die Iulij anno regni nostri 3. per billam ipsius Iusticarij. Yet *Holinshed* writeth that this *William Marshall* the younger, deceased at London, and lyeth buried by his father in the new Temple.

Richard Marshall the second brother succeeded; he was Earle Marshall of England, Earle of Penbroke in Wales, and Ogie in Normandie, and Prince of of Leinster in Ireland. In the yeere 1233. and the Moneth of Aprill, in a battell nigh Kildare, upon the great Heath called the Curragh, fighting against the Oconors; hee tooke his deaths wound, whereof shortly he dyed. Hee lieth buried by his brother *William* in the blacke Fryers at Kilkennye, which was the foundation of *William*, Earle Marshall, his father. *Henry* the third lamented his death, and protested that he lost then the worthiest Captaine of his time. His tombe (with the tombe of eighteene Knights that came over at the Conquest, and resting in that Abbey) at the suppression of the Monasterie, was defaced, and inhabitants there turned them to their private uses; and of some they made swine-troughs, so as there remaineth no Monument in the said Abbey, save one stone,

whereupon the picture of a Knight is portraied, bearing a shield about his necke, wherein the *Cantwels* armes are insculped; and yet the people there call it Ryddir in Curry, that is, *the Knight slaine at the Curraghe.* *Iohn Clyn*, guardian of the Fryers there, in his Annals of Ireland writeth thus.

Post incarnatum lapsis de virgine natum
Annis millenis tribus triginta ducentis
In primo mensis Aprilis, Kildariensis
Pugna die Sabbati fuit in tristitia facti
Acciderant stallo pugnæ Comiti Mariscallo.

And upon his Tombe.

Hic Comes est positus, Richardus vulnere fossus
Cujus sub fossa Kilkennia continet ossa.

After the decease of *Richard Gilbert*, Marshall, the third brother was Earle Marshall of England, Earle of Penbroke and Ogie, and Prince of Leinster, *Anno* 1239. King *Henry* the third held his Christmas at Winchester, where there rose a grudge betweene the King and this Earle *Gilbert*, by reason that this same Earle, with his servants, having tip-staves in their hands, comming to the Court, were not suffered to enter within the gates, but were kept backe by the Porters and others: of which injury when hee complained, the King made him an overthwart answer. Whereupon the Earle not well pleased therewith,

estranged himselfe from the Court, and went into the North country, so that thenceforth, he and his brother *Walter* gave small attendance upon the King; and to end with this Earle *Gilbert*, it fell out on a time, in a Turnay which hee had attempted without the Citie of Hereford, contrary to the Kings pleasure, that his unruly horse cast him, so that of the hurt which he tooke with the fall, he shortly after departed this life, in the yeere 1241. and was buried in the new temple Church at London: hee had married the Lady *Margaret*, the sister of *Alexander*, King of Scots, who by her had no issue; she also dyed *Anno* 1245.

Walter Marshall succeeded *Gilbert* in all the former honours and possessions, both in England and Ireland, who because he had procured the turnament wherein his brother was slaine, hardly obtained of the king the same. He departed this life at Godrike Castle by Monmouth, and was buried at Tintern, *Anno* 1245. leaving no issue behind him.

Anselme Marshall the fift sonne of *William* Earle Marshall succeeded *Walter*, hee was the last of the *Maxfields*, and died without issue. Hee had married *Mathildia* or *Mawd* daughter of the Earle of Hereford, and because hee had entred without doing of homage unto the King, his wife after his decease could have no dowry, wherof among the statutes of England I find the cause by especial words thus overruled.

When any dyeth and his heire entreth into the Land, that his Ancesters held of the King, the day that he died before he hath done homage to the King, and received seisin of the King, hee shall give no free hold thereby; and if hee dyed seised during that time, his wife shall not be indowed of the same land as came late in ure; by *Mawd* the daughter of the Earle of Hereford, wife of *Anselme* the Marshal. Who after the death of *Walter* Marshall of England his brother, tooke his seisin of the Castle and mannor of Strogill, and died in the same Castle; before hee had entred by the King, and before hee had done homage unto him, whereupon it was agreed, that his wife should not be indowed, because that her husband had not entred by the King, but rather by trusion.

This *Anselme* died in England, and was buried at Tinterne. After the death of these five brethren; *Florilegus* writeth thus. All the sonnes of *William* the great Marshall (it is not knowne what sinne required the same) according to the Prophecy of the Countesse their mother, without issue left behind them, as shadowes departed out of this world; yet all successively became Earles, even as their mother by a Propheticall spirit foreshewed, and so the Noble sheild or buckler of the Marshalls, dreadful to so many and so great enemies of England, vanished away. *Mathew Paris* wrote the story at large. The aforesaid *William*, as Warlike and stout, called Marshall, as if hee had beene *Mars* his Seneschall while in Ireland hee gave

himselfe to slaughter, and burning, and got to himselfe large possessions, he tooke away by strong hand and injuriously, from an holy Bishop two mannors or Lordships belonging to his Church, and presumptuously usurped them, as though he might, by just title possesse them, as if he had wonne them with the sword. The Bishop after many admonitions, and receiving many froward answers, thundred against him (and not without cause) the sentence of Excommunication, the which the Earle despised, and pleaded for excuse; the warlike season keeping injuries upon injuries: Whereupon not without advisement one Maister *Gervasius de Melckeria*, framed of him this distinction and shrowded himselfe in his person:

Sum quem Saturnum sibi sensit Hibernia, Solem
Anglia Mercurium Normania, Gallia Martem.

I am whom Ireland Saturne hight, and England Sol me cals,
Amids the Normans Mercury, and Mars among the Gauls.

....

The meaning in a word is, how that he in his time had tamed the wild Irish, and had beene the shining beame of honour unto the English, as an Ambassadour to pacifie the Normans, and an invincible Knight among the French nation, but forwards with *Paris;* the aforesaid Earle held those mannors all his life time, and annexed them unto his dominions: Within

a few yeeres after, the Earle ended the way of all flesh, and was buried in the new Temple at London; the Bishop hearing of this (for he was the Bishop of Fernes, a Cistertian Monke, by birth Irish, and famous for Sanctity) not without great paine in travaile, he went unto the King, who was then in London, exhibited a grievous complaint of the injury done unto him, and how that hee had justly excommunicated the Earle, and humbly besought the King, that by his soveraigne authority and Princely mandat, and also for the good of the said Earle *Williams* soule, he would see his mannors restored unto him, that in so doing (though he were dead) yet might reape the benefit of absolution. The King with this was moved, and willed the Bishop to repaire to the Earles grave and absolve him, and he would diligently labour for his satisfaction; the Bishop together with the King went to his Tombe, and in the hearing of al that were present, as if they had been both alive, said, O *William*, that here lyest interred, and wrapped in the bonds of Excommunication, if the thing which thou hast injuriously taken away from my Church, bee restored by the king, or by thine heire, or by some one of thy kindred or friends, with competent satisfaction, I absolve thee, other wise I doe ratifie the said sentence that thou being ever wrapped in thy sinnes, maiest remaine damned in hell. The King hearing this, was moved and sharply rebuked the immoderat rigour of the Pontificall Prelate. To whom the Bishop replied,

my Lord and dread soveraigne, marvaile not, though I be out of patience, for he hath spoiled my Church to his great commoditie. The King then secretly conferring with *William* the eldest sonne of this Earle, and heire to the whole, and now invested in the inheritance and Earledome, and certaine others his brethren, besought them by the restoring the mannors unjustly taken away, mercifully to deliver their fathers soule; To whom *William* the heir made answer, I doe not beleeve, neither is to be credited, that my father tooke them injuriously, for that which is gotten by the sword, may lawfully be enjoyed; for if that old and doting Bishop hath given a wrong sentence, let the curse light upon his owne pate. I will not weaken my estate, nor diminish the inheritance wherein I am invested, my father dyed seized thereof, and I have rightly entred. Vnto these words all the brethren yeelded their consents. The King being then of tender yeeres, and under Tutor, would not give cause of heavinesse unto so great and Noble a personage; when the Bishop understood this, hee was more waspish, and moved with the countenance of the sonnes, then with the former iniury of the father, and turning him to the King, spake aloud; what I have said, I have said; what I have written, I have written, never to be blotted out.

To be short, the Bishop with great sorrow departed, and in bitternesse, prophecied of the ill successe of

the children, who dyed and lived in great honour all the dayes of their lives: but these matters we are to referre to the secret iudgement of God.

After the decease of these five brethren, five Earles, and five Princes of Leinster, leaving no issue behinde them, the five daughters their sisters, *Ioane*, *Mathilda*, *Isabell*, *Sibilla*, and *Eva*, being honourably matched, had their fathers and brethrens possessions and territories in Ireland orderly divided amongst them; *Ioane*, the eldest daughter of *William* Earle Marshall, and eldest sister of the five brethren (before spoken of) was married to *Warren de Mountchensen*, who in right of her, had allotted unto him, the County of Wexford; they had issue, one daughter, *Ioane* that was married, *Anno* 1247. to *William de Valence*, a Norman, the sonne of *Hugh Brune*, Earle of March, and *Turryn*, Vicount of Curce, &c. hee was halfe brother to King *Henry* the third, by Queene *Isabell*, daughter and heire of *Amerie*, Earle of Angolesm, the widdow of King *Iohn*. This *William* in the right of his wife, was Earle of Penbroke, and Lord of Wexford, and died *Anno* 1296. he had issue, two sonnes and two daughters, *William de Valence*, *Owdomare alias Aimer de Valence*, *Isabell* and *Ioane*; *William* succeeded his father in the Earldome of Penbroke, and Lordship of Wexford, and died without issue. *Aymer* his brother after him, was Earle of Penbroke, and Lord of Wexford, and died without issue, whereupon the inheritance fell to the two sisters, *Isabell* and *Ioane*.

Isabell was married to *Iohn Hastings*, Lord *Hastings* of Abergevenny, who in the right of his wife had one halfe of the county of Wexford allotted unto him, and had issue, *Elizabeth*, which married *Reynold*, Lord *Gray* of Ruthin. *Ioane* the second sister was married to *Iohn* Lord *Comyn*, who in her right, had the other halfe of Wexford, and he had issue, two daughters, *Elizabeth* and *Ioane; Elizabeth* married *Richard* Lord *Talbot*, and *Ioane* was married to *David*, Earle of Atholl in Scotland, and thus the County of Wexford was divided.

Mathilda, or *Mawde*, the second daughter of *William*, Earle Marshall of England, had the county of Cattelough, *alias* Carlogh, assigned unto her: she was married to *Hugh Bigod*, Earle of Norfolke, father of *Ralph Bigod*, whose daughter and heire *Isabell*, was married to Sir *Gilbert Lacy*, who had issue, *Margery* and *Mawd*, *Margery* was married to *Iohn* Lord *Verdon*, of whom the Earle of Shrewesbury, and the Earle of Essex are descended. *Mawd* married *Ieffery Genivill*, father to *Peter Genivill*, whose daughter and heire was married to *Roger Mortimer*, Lord of Wigmore, and the first Earle of March.

Isabell, the third daughter of *William*, Earle Marshall of England, had to her portion, the county of Kilkenny. She was married to Sir *Gilbert de Clare*, Earle of Glocester and Herford, whose discent is before spoken of. Hee was slaine by the Scots in King

Edward the seconds time, and died without issue. I have seene a Charter granted by him to the towne of Kilkenny. *Gilbert Clare*, Earle of Glocester and Herford, to our Seneshall of Kilkenny, and to our treasurer of the same, greeting; know you that we for the common profit of the towne of Kilkenny, of our especiall favour have granted to our loving Burgesses of the same towne, &c. the whole in substance is, that none shall sell victuals there, but it shall be prized by the officers of our towne. After the decease of Sir *Gilbert Clare*, then the Earldomes of Glocester and Herford, and the County of Kilkenny, fell betweene his three sisters, begotten upon *Isabell* aforesaid, to wit, *Elenor*, *Margaret*, and *Elizabeth*. *Elenor* was married to *Hugh Spencer* the younger, *Margaret* was married to *Peter Gaveston*, and after his death, to *Hugh* Lord *Audely*; *Elizabeth* was married first to *William* Lord Burgh, Earle of Vlster; the second time to *Ralph Roch*, Baron of Farmoy; thirdly, to *Theobald*, Lord *Verdon*; and lastly, to *Roger Damary*, and had issue by every one of them.

Sibilla the fourth daughter of *William* Earle Marshall, had to her part the Countie of Kildare, and was married to *William Ferers*, Earle of Ferers and Darby, who had issue, *Agnes*, *Isabell*, *Mathilda*, *Sibilla*, *Cecilia*, and a second *Sibill*; *Agnes* was married to *William de Vescy*, who had issue, *Iohn de Vescy*, who had issue, *William de Vescy* that died without issue in his fathers life time. Lastly, this County of

Kildare was given by the King unto *Iohn Fitz Thomas*, the first Earle of Kildare, as hereafter in more convenient place shall appeare.

Eva, the first daughter of *William* Earle Marshall, had to her portion, the Mannor of Dounmas in Leix, and was married to *William Bruse*, Lord *Bruse* of Gower, who had issue, *Mathilda*, *Elenor*, and *Eva*. *Mathilda* was married to *Roger Mortimer*, *Elenor* was married to *Humphery de Bohun* Earle of Herford and *Eva*, to *Cantilupe*, *alias William de Canlow*: Of the line of these *Maxfields*, I meane of *William* Earle Marshall of England, the pedigree & discent of this Noble familie, the properties and purports holds of the daughters, I have seene sundry copies. *Nicholas Magwir*, Bishop of Leighlen perfected an abstract of the division of the land in Ireland, among the daughters and the particularities thereof, which is to be seene in the red towne-booke of Kilkenny: and now forwards with the history, from whence I have somewhat digressed.

Anno 1190. (in which yeere the Citie of Dublin, by foule mishap, was fired to ashes) King *Richard* set all in a readinesse for his iourney into the holy land, gathered masses of money together, and among others it is remembred, what a summe of money he received of *Hugh Pudsey* a Norman, and Bishop of Durham, that gave an inestimable summe to be made an Earle, whom the Antiquaries doe condemne for his intolera-

ble pride, and damnable covetousnesse, whom the King also flowted after hee had received the coyne; saying, *Loe, I have made a young Earle of an old Bishop.* In this voyage and preparation for the recovery of Ierusalem, and the ayde of the Christians in Asia, there went *Fredericke*, Emperour of Almaine, *Richard*, King of England, *Philip* of France, *William* of Cicilia, *Otho*, Duke of Burgundie, the Venetians, Pisanes, Prisones, Danes and Flemings: Now that the King is on his iourney abroad, let us talke a little (gentle Reader) of little *Iohn* at home: *Stanihurst* leads me into the history, and reporteth that *Anno* 1189. he came into Ireland, and sojourned at Dublin; the storie goeth (and especially in *Hector Boetius*, and *Iohn Major*, Antiquaries of Scotland) how that in those daies, there were many outlawes in the North parts of England; of these outlawes, *Robin Hood*, and little *Iohn* were Chiefetaines: It was said of *Robin Hood* that he was an Earle, and after outrages by him committed, he kept the woods; his company was of some hundred persons, all chosen and picked Archers, of singular strength to handle their weapons, and such as durst encounter with 400. others: they robbed none but the rich, as Tanners, and Grasiers, and Vsurers, and Bishops, Priests, and fat Abbots; they shed no bloud, they killed no man, releeved themselves and the poore also with their spoyles. *Robin Hood* after many theevish feats, fell sicke, went into a Nunnery in Scotland, to be let bloud, where he was betrayed, and bled to death: wherupon the company

brake, and the crue dispersed themselves, every man to shift for himselfe; little *Iohn* came to Ireland, with many of his confederates, and found in the woods, enough to fit his humour, and fell so much to his old occupation, that he was faine to flye the land. In the end, he went to Scotland, and there died. There are memorable acts reported of him, which I hold not for truth, that he would shoot an arrow a mile off, and a great deale more; but them I leave among the lyes of the land.

Anno 1191. the Monasterie *de iugo Dei*, was founded *Anno* 1193. King *Richard* after many most valiant exploits in the Holy Land, (the which I hold not so necessary for this place) after the drowning of *Fredericke* the Emperour, and after the sudden and envious departure of *Philippe* King of France; hearing the conspiracy of the said *Philippe*, and the treason of his brother *Iohn* aspiring to the Crowne of England; made peace with the Saladine for three yeres, and with a small company returning homewards, was taken prisoner by *Leopold*, Duke of Austria, who brought him to *Henry* the Emperour, and there kept him in prison a yeere and 5. months, untill he had paid his ransome, which was *Anno* 1194.

Hee was received into England with the joy and applause of all true harts, and having setled the affaires of the Realme in due sort, he went into France, where he had much a doe with the French King, the which

for brevities sake, I doe omit, and yet one memorable act of his I may not omit, and thus it was; There came unto him one *Fulco* a Priest, who with great courage and boldnesse said: 'Thou hast, O Mighty King 'three daughters very vicious and of evill disposition, 'take good heed of them, and betimes provide them 'good husbands; to whom the King in rage an-'swered: thou errant lyar, and shamelesse hypocrit, 'thou knowest not where thou art, nor what thou say-'est, I weene thou art not well in thy wits, for I have 'never a daughter, as the world will beare me wit-'nesse, get thee out of our presence. To whom *Fulco* 'replyed, If it like your Grace, I lye not, but say 'truth, for you have three daughters which continu-'ally frequent your Court, and (more is the pitty) 'wholly possesse your person; I meane, Pride, Covet-'ousnesse and Leachery. The King thereat smiled, 'and called his Lords and Barons unto him, and re-'lated what *Fulco* had delivered unto him, and thereup-'on gave his resolution: Here before you all I doe pre-'sently bestow my three daughters. First, I give my 'daughter swelling *Pride*, to the proud Templars: my 'greedy daughter *Avarice*, to the covetous Order of 'the Cistercian Monkes: and my daughter *Leachery*, 'to the wanton Prelats of the Church.' This noble King went to besiege a Town called *Chalus Cheverell* in Poitou, in the confines of Britaine, where unlooked for, from the wall of the Towne, he was wounded with a venomed arrow out of a Crosbow; whereof shortly after hee died: afore his death hee sent for him, that

was the cause of his death, forgave him, yea & gave him money in his purse; but after his death he was apprehended and cut off with cruell tortures. Lastly, King *Richard* tooke order for his buriall, thus he bequeathed his body to Fount Ebrad, there to lye at his fathers feet, whom in his life time he had offended; his heart to *Roan* that had alwayes beeń true unto him; and his bowels to *Chalus Cheverell* where he tooke his death, for that filth was fit for them, that had beene unto him both false and rebellious, *Mathew Paris* hath his Epitaph thus.

Ad Chalus cecidit Rex, regni cardo Richardus,
His ferus, his humilis, his agnus, his Leopardus;
Casus erat lucis Chalus. Per secula nomen
Non intellectum fuerat, sed nominis omen
Non patuit, res clausa fuit; sed luce cadente
Prodiit in lucem pro casu lucis adempta.

Againe of his legacie.

Pictavus exta ducis sepelit, tellusque Chalutis
Corpus dat claudi sub marmore fontis Ebrandi:
Neustria tuque tegis cor inexpugnabile Regis:
Sic loca per trina se sparsit tanta ruina;
Nec fuit hoc finus, cui sufficeret locus unus.

Iohn the fift sonne of *Henry* the second, Earle *Morton, alias Mortaigne* and Lord of Ireland, as formerly hath beene delivered, by the gift of his bro-

ther King *Richard* the first, Earle of Cornwall, Dorset, Sommerset, Nottingham, Darby, Lancaster, and in the right of his marriage, Earle of Glocester, was Crowned at Westminster, King of England, *Anno* 1199. Hee was first married to *Isabell* (whom the Britaines called *Hawise*, and the Cornish *Avis*) daughter to *Robert* Earle of Glocester, who for that they were found within the third degree, were divorced, so that King *Iohn* left both the Lady *Isabell* and the Earledome of Glocester, whereupon by the advice of *Philip* King of France, he matched in holy wedlocke with *Isabell* daughter to *Amerie*, Earle of Angolesme. This *Isabell* (if not married) had beene affianced to *Hugh Brune*, Earle of March, a Noble man of Aquitaine, who gave battaile in that quarell to King *Iohn*, and was discomfitted, yet after the death of King *Iohn*, hee had her to wife.

Immediately upon the Coronation of *Henry* the third (who succeeded him) broyles beganne in England, France and Ireland, which had every way a tragicall end. *Bruse* in England, *Arthure* in France, and *Courcy* in Ireland, are testimonies thereof: But orderly of these as the Nature of the Historie requires; *Arthure* the sonne of *Ieffry Plantagenet* nephew to King *Iohn*, lived when his uncle *Iohn* aspired to the Crowne, being 16. yeeres of age, he was affianced to a daughter of *Philippe* the French King, the said *Philippe* Knighted him in the field; he was Duke of Britain, Earle of Anjou, Poitiers, Maine and Turrow

of Normandy. He did homage unto his uncle for some, and to *Philippe* for the rest; his uncle had him in Iealousie, first lest that in processe of time, he would make claime to the Crowne: secondly, for that he adhered too much to the French, and the young Prince upon conference, with bold spirit told him, that he did him wrong, and that hee was bound in honour to deliver unto him the Crowne of England, with all that thereunto appertained. Shortly after, it fell out that King *Iohn* took this *Arthure* confederate against him, with *William de Bruse*, *Hugh Brune* and others, imprisoned him in Falaise in Normandy; from thence he was brought to Roane, and there clapt in the Tower, under the custody of *Robert de Veipont*, where shortly after he finished his life, whether by leaping into the ditch, thinking to make his escape, or by meane of some privy hand, which murther it is not as yet agreed upon *Vtinam* (saith *Mat. Paris*) *non ut fama refert invida;* by occasion whereof, K. *Iohn* was ever after had in great suspition, whether justly or unjustly the Lord knoweth King *Iohn* fearing the secret practises of his adversaries, and doubting the revolt of his Barons, sent for his further security, unto those whom he most suspected for hostages and pledges of their loialty, and among others, unto *William de Bruse* a Normand borne, but Lord of *Brechnok*, saith *Guttin Owen*, and a great commander in South-wales. The wife, like a quicke Dame, taking the answer out of her husbands mouth, gave this round speech; that shee would not

give any of her sonnes to King *Iohn*, who already had slaine and murthered his owne nephew *Arthur*. These words being lavishly delivered unto the King, set him in such a heat of displeasure against her husband (though hee had rebuked her sharply for the same) that the L. *Bruse* with his wife and children fled the Realme, and got them unto Ireland for safeguard of their lives; and when King *Iohn* came unto Ireland, they fled to the Ile of Man, where they were apprehended and sent to the Castle of Windsore in England, and there (as the common fame went) famished to death. But *William de Bruse* himselfe escaped the hands of the King in Ireland, and fled into France, died at Corbell, and was buried in Paris. The next that comes upon the stage is Sir *Iohn de Courcy* Earle of Vlster, Lord of Conaght, that had lastly beene L. Liev. of Ireland, who governing the land with great circumspection, together with Sir *Hugh de Lacy* the younger, who maligned him secretly, and envied his prosperity, in so much that hee accused him to King *Iohn*, saying, that he laid to the Kings charge the murthering of his nephew *Arthure;* whereupon King *Iohn* sent for him into England; and gave commission unto Sir *Hugh de Lacy*, and his brother *Walter Delacy*, to attach his person. Sir *Iohn de Courcy* having secret intelligence of their drift, kept himselfe a loofe: Sir *Hugh Delacy* finding that levied an army, and invaded Vlster; the Country rose against him and drove him to flie. Then *Lacy* proclaimed him traitor, and marched towards him

with all the forces he could make. *Courcy* in like sort prepared for his comming.

At Dune they met and fought a cruell battaile, where the field was all blood, and many slaine on both sides, but in the end the victory fell to *Courcy*, and *Lacy* went back with shame enough. Then *Lacy* practised how he might betray him.

It is said among the Irish, that *Courcy* offred the combat, and that *Lacy* refused it, aleadging that it was not for him, that represented the Kings person, to hazard his life with an inferior, being a subject and a traytor. *Lacy* makes proclamation, promising a large reward to him that should bring him in *Courcy* either alive or dead, but it would not be; then privily he dealt with some of his servants, that if they would undertake the apprehension of him, they should have great rewards; it was concluded, and this advice the betraiers gave: Sir *Iohn de Courcy* is a mighty man in armes, and of such strength, that no one man dares be so hardy as lay hand upon him, and againe hee is alwaies both in publick and privat well provided: Yet we can direct you a course to bring your purpose to effect: upon good Friday yeerly he weares no armes, but is wholly given to divine contemplation, and commonly walketh all solitary round about the Church yard of Dune: if you provide a troope of horsemen in a readinesse, and send your espiall before, there you shall have him, apprehend

him and worke your will, and hither they came, and laid hands upon him. *Courcy* now unarmed and altogether distressed; ranne to a wooden crosse that stood in the Church yard, tooke the pole therof and laid about him lustily; *Courcy* at that time had but a few attending on him, and they armelesse; of which number, were two young Gentlemen, the sonnes of Sir *Amorick Saint Laurence* which were slaine; to bee short, the Author of the Booke of *Houth* reporteth, that *Courcy* in that Skirmish slew 13. of *Lacy* his men, that died not upon the Crosse, but under the Crosse, but in the end he was carried away, conveied beyond the seas, clapt in the Towre of London, and condemned to perpetuall imprisonment: Whereupon *Lacy* for that service, had the Earledome of Vlster given him, and the Iudases that betrayed their Master had their hire. Then they craved of Sir *Hugh de Lacy* a pasport into England, with the relation of the good service they had done in Ireland, which was granted upon condition, that upon the paine of death, they should never returne into Ireland againe, neither to open the same afore it were demanded of them: It was as followeth.

'I *Hugh de Lacy* Lord Iustice of Ireland, servant 'to my dread Soveraigne Lord King *Iohn:* To all 'them that shall read these few lines, greeting; 'know you that these men, whose names are under 'written, served sometimes Sir *Iohn de Courcy* late 'Earle of Vlster, but now in durance in the Towre of

'London, and for a summe of money, betraied their 'owne Master into my hand. I deeme them no bet- 'ter then *Iudas* the traitor: how hardly soever I have 'conceived of *Courcy*, I hold them a thousand times 'more damnable traitors. Wherefore let no subject 'within any of the Kings dominions, give them any 'entertainment, but spit in their faces, and suffer 'them to rogue about and wander as Iewes.' He provided them a barke, with saile and victuall, but gave them no Pilots nor sea-faring men, for want of skill they could not take the seas, but were tossed with winde and weather, along the Coast, at length the Tyde brought them into the river of Corke: they were no sooner landed, but they were apprehended, examined, and brought to Sir *Hugh de Lacy*, and forthwith all foure hanged cheeke by jole.

Not long after, there fell some difference betweene *Iohn*, King of England, and *Philip*, King of France, for the right of some Fort in Normandie, who to avoyde the shedding of Christian bloud, agreed of each side to put it to a combat; of King *Philips* part there was a French man in readinesse; King *Iohn* upon the sudden wist not what to doe for a Champion to encounter with him; at length, one attending upon his person, enformed him that there was one *Courcy* in the Towre of London, the onely man in his dominions (if hee would undertake it) to answer the challenge. King *Iohn* ioyfull of this, sent the first, yea second, and third time, promising large rewards, and

rich gifts, and that it stood him upon as farre as the honour of his Crowne and kingdome did reach, to make good the combat. *Courcy* answered very frowardly, (the which was taken in good part in regard of the urgent necessitie) that he would never fight for him, neither for any such as he was, that he was not worthy to have one drop of bloud spilt for him; that he was not able to requite him the wrongs he had done him, neither to restore him the hearts ease he had bereaved him of: yet notwithstanding all the premises, he was willing, and would with all expedition, be ready to venture his life in defence of the Crowne and his country. Whereupon it was agreed, that he should be dyeted, apparrelled, and armed to his content, and that his owne sword should be brought him out of Ireland. The day came, the place appointed, the Liste provided, the scaffolds set up, the Princes with their nobilitie of each side, with thousands in expectation. Forth comes the French Champion, gave a turne, and rests him in his tent: They sent for *Courcy*, who all this while was trussing of himselfe about with strong poynts, and answered the messengers, if any of their company were to goe to such a banquet, I thinke he would make no great haste. Forth he comes, gave a turne, and went into his Tent. When the trumpets sounded to battaile, forth come the combatants, and viewed each other. *Courcy* beheld him with a wonderfull sterne countenance, and passed by. The French man not liking his grimme looke, the strong proportion and feature

of his person, stalked still along, and when the Trumpets sounded the last charge, *Courcy* drew out his sword, and the French man ranne away, and conveyed him to Spaine. Whereupon they sounded victory, the people clapt their hands, and cast up their cappes; King *Philip* desired King *Iohn* that *Courcy* might bee called before them, to shew some part of his strength and manhood, by a blow upon a Helmet; it was agreed, a stake was set in the ground, and a shirt of maile, and a Helmet thereon; *Courcy* drew his sword, looked wonderfull sternely upon the Princes, cleft the helmet, the shirt of maile, and the stake so farre in, that none could pull it out but himselfe. Then the Princes demanded of him, what hee meant to looke so sowrely upon them; his answer was, if hee had missed his blow upon the blocke, he would have cut off both the Kings heads. All that hee said was taken in good part: King *Iohn* discharged him out of all his troubles, gave him great gifts, and restored him to his former possessions in Ireland. It is written further, that hereupon hee sailed into England, came to Westchester, offered himselfe to the sea, and was put backe againe fifteene times by contrary windes which rose upon a sodaine, to the English shore. And in the booke of *Houth* it is delivered, that upon every repulse, the night following, he was admonished in a vision, not to attempt the seas, for to saile into Ireland, and that he should never set foot upon any land there; and withall, that the reason was yeelded thus. *Courcy*, thou hast done very ill, for

thou hast pulled downe the master, and set up the servant; for he had translated the Cathedrall Church, and the Prebendaries of the blessed Trinitie in Dune, into an Abbey of blacke Monkes, brought thither from Chester, and consecrated the same to the honour of Saint *Patricke*. Whereupon remembring himselfe that he had done very ill in taking the name from God to a creature, gave sentence upon himself, that he was worthily punished. Immediately hee altered his course, went into France, and there died: now forwards with the history, according to the due course of time in the raigne of King *Iohn*, so the booke of *Houth* reporteth.

Anno 1202. *Meler Fitz Henry*, whose father was the base sonne of King *Henry* the first, founded the Abbey of Cownall; hee came into Ireland with the first Conquerours, being a young stripling, and is highly commended by *Cambrensis* for his great valour, and worthinesse in martiall prowesse: he left this world, *Anno* 1220. his Epitaph I finde in *Iohn Clynne*.

Conduntur tumulo Meyleri nobilis ossa,
Indomitus domitor totius gentis Hibernæ.

Intombed are the bones of him they Noble *Meler* call,
Who was the tamelesse tamer of the Irish nation all.

Anno 1205. in the seventeenth yeere of the raigne

of King *Iohn*, *Theobald Fitz Walter*, *Fitz Gilbert*, *Becket* the first Lord Butler of Ireland, founded the Monastery of Wethencia, *alias* Wethran, *alias* Wethenoya, *alias* Voghney, in the county of Limeric; this difference I finde in *Dowling*, *Grace*, and others.

Anno 1206. Saint *Monon* an Irish man, and a Martyr, (*Molanus* layeth him downe among the Saints in Flanders) flourished; he is reputed the Patron of Nassonia, under the command of the Abbot of Saint *Hubert*, in the Lordship of Audiamum; he was the Disciple of Saint *Remulch*, and Saint *Iohn Agnus*, Bishop of Trajectum, and of Irish birth; this *Monon* was murthered at Ardevenna, (saith *Molanus*) by some bloudy massacres, & lyeth buried at Nassonia, in the Church which he there had founded.

Anno 1208. (I finde it in *Dowlinge* and *Grace*) Sir *Hugh de Lacy* the younger, being Lord Iustice, entred into Thurles, where the country being in rebellion, offered him battaile, he laid siege to Castle Meiler, wanne it, brake it downe, and made it even with the ground; but he lost there more men, (say the Irish) then he tooke away with him; the chiefe Rebell was *Ieffery Mac Moris*, *alias Morich*.

Anno 1209. the occasion of blacke Munday, and the originall remembrance thereof rose at Dublin. The Citie of Dublin by reason of some great mortality, being wasted and desolate, the inhabitants of

Bristoll flocked thither to inhabit, who after their country manner, upon Holy dayes, some for love of the fresh ayre, some to avoyd idlenesse, some other for pastime, pleasure, and gamings sake, flocked out of the towne towards Cullen wood upon Munday in Easter weeke. The *Birnnes* and *Tooles*, (the mountaine enemies) like Wolves lay in ambush for them, and upon espiall finding them unarmed, fell upon them, & slue some 300. persons, besides women & children, which they led in their hands, although shortly after, the towne was upon the report thereof, eftsoones peopled againe by Bristolians; yet that dismall day is yeerely remembred, and solemnly observed by the Maior, Sheriffes, and Citizens, with feast and banquet, and pitching up of tents in that place in most brave sort, daring the enemy upon his perill, not to bee so hardy, as once to approach neere their feasting campe; and whereas the Irish heretofore accounted Tuesday their fatall and infortunate day, (for Lymric was twice wonne, Wexford yeelded up, Waterford was besieged, and Dublin was sacked upon a Tuesday) now they have Munday in memory, making difference of dayes, not fitting the minde of the Apostle, which forbade the superstitions or vaine observations of daies, &c. *Gal.* 4.

Anno 1211, (or somewhat before) the Monastery of Grenard was founded by *Richard Tute*, who shortly after miscarried at Athlone, by the fall of a Turret, and was buried in the same Monastery. About the

same time, in the yeere 1209. the Monastery of Forte was founded by *Walter Lacy*, Lord of Meth.

Anno 1210. and the twelfth yeere of his raigne, King *Iohn* came into Ireland, and landed at Waterford with an huge army, marvellous well appointed to pacifie that rebellious people, that were universally revolted, burning, spoyling, preying, and massacring the English. *Fabian* and *Graffton* alleage the cause that moved the Irish men to this rebellion, to have been for that the King endevord to lay grievous taxes upon them towards his aide in the warres against the French King, which they could not brooke, and therefore rose in armes against their Soveraigne. When hee came to Dublin the whole Countrey fearing his puissance, craved peace and flocked unto him along the sea cost, the Champian Countries and remote places receiving an oath to bee true and faithfull unto him. There were 20. *(Reguli)* of the chiefest rulers within Ireland, which came to the King to Dublin, and there did him homage and fealty, as appertained. *Harding* nameth them Lord *O Neale*, and many more. *Walsingham* remembreth *Catelus* King of Conaght, it forceth it not though they misse the right names of place and person; it is a fault in manner common to all foraigne writers.

After this hee marched forwards into the land, and tooke into his hands, divers Fortresses, and strong Holds of his enemies, that fled before him, for feare

to be apprehended; as *William le Bruse, Mathilda* his wife, *William* their sonne with their traine, of whom I spake before; also *Walter de Lacy* Lord of Meath, and *Hugh de Lacy* Earle of Vlster, and Lord Iustice of Ireland, fearing his presence, fled into France; their exaction, oppression and tyranny was intolerable. Likewise they doubted how to answer the death of Sir *Iohn de Courcy* Lord of Ratheny and Kilbarrock within 5. miles of Dublin, whom they had murthered, of especiall malice and deadly hatred.

First, for that he was of the house of Sir *Iohn de Courcy*, Earle of Vlster, (whom the *Lacies* alwaies maligned.)

Secondly, for that he had made grievous complaints of them in England to King *Iohn*, the tryall whereof they could not abide. Vpon the sight of the *Lacies*, King *Iohn* made *Iohn Gray* Bishop of Norwich his deputy. Of these *Lacies* it is further remembred in the Booke of *Houth*, and other antiquities; how that in France they obscured themselves, in the Abbey of S. *Taurin*, and gave themselves to manuall labour, as digging, delving, gardening, planting, and greffing for daily wages, the space of 2. or 3. yeares; the Abbot was well pleased with their service, and upon a day (whether it were by reason of some inkling or secret intelligence given him, or otherwise) demaunded of them of what birth and parentage they

were, and what Country they came from; when they had acquainted him with the whole, hee bemoned their case, and undertooke to become a suiter unto the King for them; in a word hee obtained the Kings favour for them thus farre, that they were put to their fyne, and restored to their former possessions; so that *Walter de Lacy* paid for the Lordship of Meath 2500. Markes, and *Hugh* his brother, for Vlster and Conaght a greater summe.

Hugh de Lacy, in remembrance of this kindnesse which the Abbot shewed them, tooke his nephew, his brothers sonne with them into Ireland, one *Alured*, whom he Knighted and made Lord of the Dengle. The Monkes also, which out of that Monastery hee had brought with him into Ireland, hee honoured greatly, and gave them entertainment in Four, the which *Walter de Lacy* had formerly builded.

King *Iohn* having pacified the land, ordained that the English Lawes should bee used in Ireland, appointed 12. English shires with Sheriffes and other Officers, to rule the same, according unto the English Ordinances; hee reformed the Coine and made it uniforme, (some say it was *Gray* his Deputy) of like weight and finenes, and made it currant as well in England as in Ireland.

When hee had disposed of his affaires, and ordred all things at his pleasure, he tooke the sea againe,

with much triumph, and landed in England the 30. day of *August*.

Anno 1213. When the French King by instigation of *Innocentius* 3. Bishop of Rome, prepared to invade England: King *Iohn* eftsoone understanding thereof, made provision accordingly to answer his enterprise, and among others (the cause why the story is here inserted) *Holinshed* writeth how that to his aid the Bishop of Norwich, the Kings Deputy of Ireland, levied an Army of 300. foot well appointed, beside horsemen which arrived in England to the encouragement of the whole Campe. And as the French was frustrate of his purpose, so they shortly returned with great joy to their native Country.

In the same yeere, *Viz.* 1213. *Iohn Comin* Archbishop of Dublin departed this life, and was buried in the Quire of Christ-Church, whom *Henry Loudres* succeeded in the dayes of this King *Iohn*. This *Henry* builded the Castle of Dublin, and was made Lord Iustice of Ireland. His tenants nic-named him *Schorchbill* or *Schorcvillen* upon this occasion;

Hee being peaceably stalled in his Bishopprike, summoned all his tennants and farmers at a certain day appointed, to make their personall appearance before him, and to bring with them such evidences and writings as they enjoyed their holds by; the tenants of the day appointed, appeared, shewed their evidences

to their Landlord, mistrusting nothing; hee had no sooner received them, but afore their faces, upon a suddain cast them all into a fire, secretly provided for the purpose; this fact amazed some that they became silent, moved others to a stirring choller and furious rage, that they regarded neither place nor person, but brake into irreverent speeches: *Thou an Archbishop, nay, thou art a Schorcvillen*, an other drew his weapon and said, *as good for me kill as be killed; for when my evidences are burned, and my living taken away from me, I am killed.* The Bishop seeing thus tumult, and the imminent danger, whipt out at a backe doore: His Chaplains, Registers, and Summoners, were well knockt, and some of them left for dead. They threatned to fire the house over the Bishops head; some meane was made for the present time to pacifie their outrage, with faire promises, that all hereafter should be to their owne content: upon this they departed, the intent of the promises I cannot learne, other some inveigh against it; but in fine, complaint thereof being made to *Henry* 3. the King thought so hardly of the course, that hē removed him from his Iusticeship, and placed in his roome, *Maurice Fitz Girald*, of whom hereafter. This *Loudreds* was buried in Christ Church.

In the same yeere also King *Iohn* being mightily distressed through the practises of his Archbishops, Bishops, Abbots, Monkes, Priests of his dominions, and the Barons of his Kingdome revolting, and the

inward hatred of the French King, with forraigne powers intending an open invasion, was driven, to prevent further mischiefe, as I finde in *Polychronicon*, to surrender his Crowne from his head, and to subject his Kingdomes of England and Ireland, tributarie to the See of Rome, and as his client, vassall and feodarie to that See, to hold them of *Innocentius* the Bishop: againe, England being interdicted, and Ireland likewise, were after released upon agreement, composition, and Charter, and homage, as in the Chronicle of England more at large appeareth.

The death of King *Iohn*, and the manner of it, I referre to the English Chronicles. After his decease, *Henry* the third, his eldest sonne, aged about nine yeeres, began his raigne, *Anno* 1216.

Anno 1220. and the fourth yeere of *Henry* the third, so writeth *Clyn*, *Dowling*, and *Grace;* together with the English Antiquities, in their Irish collections; all Meth was wonderfully afflicted and wasted by reason of the priuate quarrels and civill warres betweene *William* Earle Marshall, Earle of Penbroke, &c. and Sir *Hugh de Lacy*, Earle of Vlster, and Lord of Connaght. Trimme was besieged, and brought to a lamentable plight, and when the rage and furie of those garboiles was somewhat mitigated and appeased, after the shedding of much bloud, the same yeere to prevent afterclaps, and subsequent calamities, the Castle of Trim was builded.

About this time, certaine worthy persons, of great fame and renowne, to wit, *Henry Loudreds*, *Roger Peppard*, and *William Peppard*, Lords successively, *de saltu Salmonis*, and *Meiler Fitz Henry*, one of the first Conquerours, paid nature her due, sinne her debt, and ended their daies.

It appeareth in *Stanihurst*, that the same yeere that *Henry Loudreds* died, *viz.* 1220., the Castle of Dublin was builded: I meane the walles foure square, or quadrangle wise, but the foure Turrets and the other afterwards. Sir *Henry Sidney* is said to have builded the inner lodgings, in whose eternall commendation, I finde in the said *Stanihurst*, these verses.

Gesta libri referunt multorum clara virorum,
Laudis & in chartis stigmata fixa manent:
Verum Sidnæi laudes hæc saxa loquuntur,
Nec jacet in solis gloria tanta libris.
Si libri pereant, homines remanere valebunt,
Si pereant homines ligna manere queant;
Lignaque si pereant, non ergo saxa peribunt,
Saxaque si pereant tempore, tempus erit,
Si pereat tempus, minime consumitur ævum,
Quod cum principio, sed sine fine manet.
Dum libri florent, homines dum vivere possunt,
Dum quoque cum lignis saxa manere valent,
Dum remanet tempus; dum denique remanet ævum,
Laus tua Sydnæi, digna perire nequit.

Anno 1224. *Abbatia de Albo tractu* was founded. By generall consent of Antiquaries, after the death of *Henry Loudres*, spoken of before. *Maurice Fitz Gerald* was by *Henry* the third, made Lord Iustice of Ireland, and afterwards fell in the King's displeasure, and was removed, but the yeeres they agree not upon, wherein I finde great discord.

The English Chronicle of Ireland delivereth that hee was made Lord Iustice *Anno* 1228. *Florilegus* and *Holinshed* write, that he was removed from his Iusticeship, *Anno* 1245. and *Iohn Fitz Ieffery* substituted in his roome. *Mathew Paris* writeth that hee was removed, *Anno* 1248. but howsoever they have mistaken the yeeres, or whether the fault of the Printer crept in, it forceth not; I am to deliver to the reader, the truth of the history, and the most worthy service of this Noble man, with the yeeres and the time as neere as I can.

Anno 1229. in the raigne of *Henry* the third, *Maurice Fitz Girald* being Lord Iustice, (*Mathew Paris* and *Holinshed* write the storie) one *Stephen Chapplen*, and Nuntio to Pope *Gregory*, came to King *Henry* with the Popes Apostolike Mandates and procuration letters, requiring of spirituall & temporall throughout England, Ireland, and Wales, the tenth of all their moveables, to the maintenance of his warres against *Fredericke* the Emperour. At the day

and place appointed when the King and his Lords spirituall and temporall met together, and the Nuntio had read his letters, the King was silent, & reputed (saith mine Author) as consenting thereto; the Earles and Barons (saith *Paris*) & all the Laytie said flatly, that they would give the Pope no tenths, neither subject their Baronies and locall possessions to the Church of Rome; the Clergie after three or foure dayes deliberation, fearing the thunderbolts of excommunication, with grudging and murmurs, and many a bitter curse, yeelded; yet *Ranulphus*, Earle of Chester, alone, stood stoutly in the cause, and would not permit the Clergie of his country to become in bondage, neither to contribute the said tenths, though England, Wales, Scotland, and Ireland were compelled to pay. Ireland sent likewise after their money, Irish curses, for they were driven at the worst hand to sell unto the mercilesse Merchants, their Cowes, Hackneyes, Caddoes, and Aqua vitæ, to make present payment, and were driven in that extremitie, to pawne and sell their Cups, Chalices, Copes, Altar-clothes and vestments.

Anno 1230. (as I finde recorded in the booke of *Houth*) *Hubertus de Burgo* was Lord Iustice of Ireland, as I gather, in the absence of *Maurice Fitz Girald*, to whom the King gave the land .... and Connaught, and made him Earle of Connaught, and shortly after, *ob probitatem & fidelititem eximiam*, so

I reade in *Ypodigma Neustria*, being called into England for his uprightnesse and singular fidelity, was made governour of the King, Lord Iustice of England, and Earle of Kent, by the consent of all the Peeres of the Realme; afterwards as the course of this world wheeles about, hee fell into the Kings displeasure, so that he called him old traytor, (and in his rage would have runne him thorow with his sword, had not the Earle of Chester and others runne betweene) for that (saith *Stow*) hee had taken five thousand markes of the Queene of France, to hinder his purpose; to avoyd the Kings displeasure, this *Hubert* fled to the Chappell of Brandwood in Essex, where he was taken, and by commandement of the King, sent to the Tower of London; all his friends forsooke him, none answered for him but the Archbishop of Dublin; wherein we may behold as in a Glasse, the disposition of feyned friends in former ages, who in the Spring of a mans felicity, like Swallowes, will flye about him, but when the winter of adversitie nippeth, like Snailes they keepe within their shels: at length this *Hubert* was somewhat reconciled to the Kings favour, that he was inlarged, yet banished the Court: lastly, he ended his miseries at his Mannor house of Bansted in Surry, and was buried at the Church of the Fryers Preachers at London, which was then in Holborne; unto the which Church he gave his noble Palace at Westminster, the which afterwards *Walter Grey* the Archbishop of Yorke bought of them, and made it his Inne, since

commonly called Yorke House, but now White-Hall. So farre *Stow*, *Holinshed*, and others.

* * *

The yeere aforesaid, I finde one *Ieffery March*, *alias Maurish*, (so *Holinshed* calleth him) in *Mathew Paris*, *Galfridus de Marisco*, to have beene Lord Iustice of Ireland: so it may be in the absence of *Maurice Fitz Girald*, who made three journeys to King *Henry* the third; one with great power out of Ireland to ayde him beyond the seas; secondly, to cleare himselfe of the death of *Richard Marshall* Earle of Pembrook: lastly, with Irish forces against the Welshmen. *Mat. Paris* and *Holinshed*, make report of his good service; How that when an Irish petit King in Conaght, understanding that both the King of England, and the Earle *Marshall* and *Maurice Fitz Gerald* were gone over into France, and so Ireland left without any great aide of men of warre, on the English part, raised a mighty Army, and with the same entred into the Marches and borders of the English dominion, spoiling and burning the Country before him. And how that *Ieffray de Maurisco* then Lord Iustice, being thereof advertized; called to him *Walter de Lacy*, Lord of Meth, and *Richard de Burgh*, assembling therewithall an huge Army, the which he divided into three parts, appointing the said *Walter de Lacy* and *Richard de Burgh* with the two first parts, to lye in ambush within certain Woods, through the which he purposed to draw the enemies. And march-

ing forth with the third, which he reserved to his owne government, he profered battaile to the Irishmen, the which when they saw but one battaile of the Englishmen, boldly assaid the same.

The Englishmen according to the order appointed, faining as though they had fled and so retired still backe, till they had trained the Irish within danger of their other two battailes which comming forth upon them, did set on them eagerly; whilest the other which seemed before to fly, returned backe againe, and set upon them in like manner; by meanes whereof, the Irishmen being in the midst were beaten downe: if they stood to it, they were before and behind slaine; if any offered to fly hee was overtaken, thus in all parts they were utterly vanquished, with the losse of 20000. Irish, and the King of Conaght taken and committed to prison. This Noble *Ieffray de Marisco* (of whom *Holinshed* writeth) 'a man some time in great honour and possessions in Ireland, fell into the displeasure of the King, was banished; who after he had remained long in exile, suffred great miserie, ended the same by naturall death: Thus the unstable Wheele goeth round about: ' and yet I may not so leave it hee had a sonne ' called *William de Maurisco*, who together with the ' father (the Iustice of God requiring the same) came ' to most shamefull ends: *Matthew*, the Munke of ' Westminster and *Matthew Paris* the Munke of Saint ' Albones, doe write the Story: While the King was ' beyond seas, a certain noble man of Irish birth to

'wit *Willielmus de Maurisco*, an exiled and banished 'man, the sonne of *Ieffray de Maurisco*, for some hai- 'nous offence laid to his charge, kept himselfe in the 'Isle of Lundy, not farre from Bristall, preying, rob- 'bing and stealing, as a notorious Pirate; at length 'being apprehended, together with 17. of his confe- 'deracy, and by the Kings commandement adjudged 'to cruell death; he was drawne at London with his 'confederats, at horse tailes to the Gibbet, and there 'hanged and quartered: His father one of the migh- 'tiest men of Ireland, by name *Galfridas de Maurisco*, 'hearing thereof, fled into Scotland, and scarce there 'could hee lye safe; who pining away with grief and 'sorrow, soone after ended a miserable life, with wished 'death; againe after in another place he writeth, '*Galfridus de Maurisco* reckened amongst the most 'Noble of Ireland, an exile and a banished man, died 'pitifully, yet not to be pitied; whom being banished 'Ireland, expulsed out of Scotland and fled out of 'England, France received for a begger, where hee 'ended an unfortunate life, after the most shamefull 'death of his sonne *Willielmus de Maurisco*.

'These things therefore I deliver more at large unto 'the hearers, that every man may wey with himselfe, 'what end is allotted unto treason, and especially being 'committed against the sacred person of a Prince: His 'father against *Richard* Earle and Marshall in Ireland, 'and his son *William* against the King, unadvisedly 'and unfortunately adventured to practice mischiefe.

Paris addeth the name of this *William* was very odious unto the King, for so much it was reported, that through the councell of *Ieffray* his father, he had conspired the death of the King, and that he had traitorously sent that varlet, which came in the night season, to Woodstock to slay the King, and last of all, that hee had killed at London in presence of the King; one *Clemens*, a Clerk, messenger of some Noble man of Ireland, that came to informe the King against him.

About this same time, florished a Learned man of Irish birth, one *Cornelius Historicus*, so called, because hee was an exquisit antiquary Bale: and *Stanihurst* have briefly written his life and commandations out of *Hector Boetius*, who was greatly furthered by this *Cornelius*, to the perfecting of the Scotish History, hee wrote as they say:

Multarum rerum Cronicon lib. 1.

About this time, *Viz. Anno* 1230. there rose a doubt in Ireland, so that they sent to England to be therein resolved: the King, by his learned Councell answered as followeth.

'*Henry* by the grace of God, &c. King of Eng-
'land, Lord of Ireland, Duke of Normandy and
'Guian, &c. Trusty and welbeloved *Gerald Fitz*
'*Maurice* Iusticer of Ireland, greeting; Whereas cer-
'tien Knights of the parties of Ireland lately informed

'us; that when any land doth discend unto sisters, 'within our dominion of Ireland, the Iustices errant in 'those parties are in doubt, whether the younger sister 'ought to hold of the eldest sister, and doe homage 'unto her or not. And forasmuch as the said Knights 'have made instance, to bee certified how it had beene 'used before within our Realme of England in like 'case; at their instance we doe you wit, that such a 'Law and Custome is in England in this case, that if 'any holding of us in chief, happen to die, having 'daughters to his heires our ancestors, and we after 'the death of the father, have alway had and received 'homage of all the daughters, and every of them in 'this case did hold of us in chiefe. And if they happ-'ned to be within age, we have alway had the ward 'and marriage of them, and if hee bee tennant to 'another Lord, the sisters being within age, the Lord 'shall have the ward and manage of them all, and 'the eldest onely shall doe homage for herselfe, and all 'her sisters, and when the other sisters come to full 'age, they shall doe their service to the Lord of the 'fee, by the hands of the eldest sister; yet shall not 'the eldest by this occasion, exact of her younger sis-'ters homage, ward, or any other subjection; for when 'they be all sisters, and in manner, as one heire to one 'inheritance: if the eldest should have homage of the 'other sister, or demaund ward, then the inheritance 'should seeme to be divided so, that the eldest sister 'should seeme to be segnioresse and tennant of inhe-'ritance, *simul & semel*, that is to say, heire of her

'owne part, and segnioresse to her sisters, which could 'not stand well together in this case, for the eldest 'can demaund no more then her sisters; but the chiefe 'mease by reason of her auncienty. Moreover, if the 'eldest sister should take homage of the yonger, she 'should be as a segnioresse to them all, and should 'have the ward of them and their heires, which should 'be none other, but to cast the Lambe to the Wolfe to 'be devoured.'

'And therefore wee command you that you cause the 'aforesaid customes that bee used within our Realme 'of England, in this case to bee proclaimed throughout 'our dominions of Ireland, and to be straightly kept 'and observed, in testimony whereof, &c. I witnesse 'my selfe at Westminster, the ninth of February, the 'thirteenth yeere of our Raigne.'

Anno 1233. or as some will have it, 1234. the 7. of *Aprill*, there appeared as it were foure Sunnes, besides the naturall Sunne, of a red colour, and a great Circle of Christall colour; from the sides whereof went out halfe Circles; in the divisions whereof, the foure Sunnes went forth. There followed that yeere great warre and cruell bloodshed, & general great disturbance throughout England, Wales, and Ireland, so write *Matthew Paris* and *Stow*.

This troublesome yeere died *Gualter Lacy* Lord of Meath, leaving behind him two daughters, coheires to

inherit his possession (to wit) *Margret* that was married to the Lord *Theobald Verdon* and *Mathilda* married to *Ieffray Genevile.*

Amids these troubles in the flourishing daies of *Maurice Fitz Gerald, Hubert de Burgo, Ieffray de Morisco,* and *Gualter de Lacy,* whose ends followed according: The Noble Earle *Richard Maxfield* Lord Maxfield, Earle Marshall of England, spoken of before, and being by them maligned, was traitorously cut off by sundry devilish draughts. *Matthew Paris* wrot the Story at large; laid downe their practise on both the sides of the seas, their forged letters; and secretly as it were by stealth, fixing thereto the Kings seale: Hee calleth them traitors, Iudasses; and *Ieffery de Morisco* he termeth *Achitophell* that gave wicked counsell. *Hubert* had a lamentable end, *Ieffery* dyed in misery, *Lacy* was shortly cut off, and *Maurice Fitz Girald* was with dishonour removed from his Iusticeship. This *Maurice* of the King desired to bee reconciled to *Gilbert Marshall* his brother, whom he greatly feared, and offered in satisfaction to build with all speed, a noble Monastery, and to endow the same with large possessions, and to furnish it with a reverent covent, to pray for the soule of *Richard Marshall:* at length with much adoe, and importunate intreaty of the King and Nobility of England, *Gilbert Marshall* granted him peace; but of Earle *Richards* end I have spoken somewhat before.

About the yeere 1233. or 34. *Hugh Mapleton*, Bishop of Ossorie, whose Episcopall see was then at Achboo, in upper Ossorie, began the foundation of the Cathedrall Church, now standing in the Irish towne of Kilkenny, in the honour of God and Saint *Canicus*, (of whom the towne of Kilkenny hath the name) and is reckoned the first founder. Hee ordained three Canons for the service, hee gave them divers Churches and tithes for their maintenance, as in the foundation of those Chanons more at large doth appeare. He builded the Bishops Court at Aghor, adding thereto fish-ponds, fishings, and other necessaries. Such good men lived in those dayes.

At the same time came the King of Connaught, exhibiting a grievous complaint unto *Henry* the third (saith *Mathew Paris*) against *Iohn de Burgo*, the sonne, as I suppose, of *Hubert de Burgo* before spoken of; that he had entred his country with forces, and wasted the same with fire and sword, that it would please his Majestie to doe him justice, and command such rash attempts to be bridled, alledging that he was his loyall subject, and paid for his kingdome, an annuall pension, mounting to the summe of 5000. marks, ever since King *Iohn* had subdued his kingdome, and that he would rid him of that base upstart, or new commer which sought unjustly to disherit him. The King tendred his reasonable requests, and commanded *Maurice Fitz Girald* then present, to plucke up by the roote, the fruitlesse Plant, the which *Hubert* Earle of

Kent had sometime planted in those parts, while he was in Ruffe, that it might budde no more. He wrote also unto the Nobilitie of Ireland, that they should banish the said *Iohn de Burgo*, and peaceably establish the King in his kingdome, who with these princely favours, joyfully returned into his country.

Anno 1235. (saith *Cooper*) the Irish men rebelled; so hee left it, and so I leave it too.

Anno 1236. *Mathew Paris* doth write that in the North parts not farre from the Abbey of Rochor Rupie, and also in Ireland, and the parts there abouts more apparantly, strange and wonderfull sights were seene, which amazed the beholders: to wit, there appeared comming forth of the earth, companies of armed men on horseback, with Speare, Shield, Sword, and banners displaid in sundry formes and shapes, riding in battaile array, and encountring together; and this sight appeared sundry dayes each after other; sometimes they seemed to joyne as it had beene in battaile, and fought sore; and sometimes they seemed to just and breake staves, as if it had beene at some triumphant justs of torny. The people of the country beheld them a farre off with great wonder, for the skirmish shewed it selfe so lively, that now and then they might see them come with their empty horses, sore wounded and hurt, and likewise men mangled and bleeding; A pittifull sight to behold, and that which seemed more strange, and most to be mervailed at, after they vanished away, the

prints of their feet appeared in the ground, and the grasse trodden in those places where they had beene seene.

Anno 1240. *Petrus de Supino* came from Pope *Gregory* into Ireland, with an authenticke papall mandate, requiring under paine of Excommunication, and other censures ecclesiasticall the twentieth part of the whole land, besides donatives and private gratuities to the maintenance of his warres against *Fredericke* the Emperour, where he extorted, saith *Mathew Paris*, a thousand and five hundred markes, and above, saith *Florilegus;* at which time also one *Petrus Pubeus*, intitled the Popes Familiar, and kinsman, and both bastards, saith *Bale*, filled in like sort his fardles in Scotland. These Nuntioes were so crafty, that they needed no Brokers, they secretly understood by Posts and Cursitors, the state of the Court of Rome, which quailed them full sore, that the Pope was either gone, or panted for life; secretly by the conduct of the Monkes of Canterbury, they were conveyed to Dover, where they tooke shipping, and crossed the seas. The Emperour *Fredericke*, against whom this provision was made, having intelligence thereof, and secretly acquainted with the Popes state, wrote to the King of England to apprehend such prollers, wherein he also reproved his cowardize. The Emperour when hee understood that the birds were flowne away, made search for the neast, yet overtooke them in Italy; where, to be short, hee imprisoned them, their kindred and favourers, ri-

fled them of their money, and sent them to Rome to sing for more money: he that will reade the story more at large, let him repaire to *Mathew Paris.*

The same yeere, saith *Mathew Paris, Andelmus* borne in Cullen, a man highly commended for life and learning, was by the Bishop of Worcester, solemnly consecrated at Westminster, Archbishop of Armagh, and Primate of Ireland, in the presence of the King, the Legate, and many reverend Prelates.

Anno 1242. *Maurice Fitz Girald,* Lord Iustice of Ireland, builded the Castle of Sligoe.

Anno 1243. *Clun* and *Dowlinge* write, that *Giraldus Fitz Maurice, Richardus de Burgo,* and *Hugh de Lacy,* Earle of Vlster in Ireland, ended the way of all flesh, and was buried at Carechfergus. *Mathew Paris* giveth *Lacy* great commendations, that he was a most renowned warriour, and a valiant Conquerour of a great part of Ireland. This *Lacy* left behinde him one daughter and heire, whom *Walter de Burgo* married, and in her right, became Earle of Vlster: of *Richardus de Burgo, Mathew Paris* writeth he had great possessions and lands in Ireland, by the conquest of his most Noble father.

Anno 1245. *Florilegus, Powell* (out of *Gitten Owen*) and *Holinshed,* doe write how that the Welsh men rebelled against the King, and his forces being foyled

by *David ap Llewelin* Prince of Wales, hee sent into Ireland to *Maurice* for ayde, and was in winter time mightily distressed, the which I finde by *Powell* recorded and written by a Noble man out of the campe unto his friends.

The King with his army lyeth at Gannocke, fortifying of that strong Castle, and we live in our Tents, thereby watching, fasting, praying, and freezing with cold; wee watch for feare of the Welch men, who are wont to invade and come upon us in the night time; we fast for want of meate, for the halfe penny loafe is worth five pence; we pray to God to send us home speedily; we starve for cold, wanting our winter garments, and having no more but a thinne linnen cloath betweene us and the winde; there is an arme of the seas under the Castle where we lye, whereto the tyde commeth, and many shippes come up to the haven, which bring victuals to the Campe, from Ireland and Chester. The King all this while expected the arrivall of *Maurice Fitz Girald*, with his Irish forces, mused with himselfe, fretted with himselfe, the winde serving and yet said nothing; at length the Irish sayles are discryd, a shore they came, and *Maurice Fitz Girald*, (together with *Phelina*, *Oconor*) *Oconoghor*, saith another, in battaile aray present themselves before the King at Chepstow, say the Irish Chroniclers, but the British Chroniclers coppied out of the Abbies of *Conwey* and *Stratflur*, by *Owen Gittine*, deliver they landed at the Ile of Man or Anglesey, the which in mine opinion

seemeth to be most likely to be true. For *David ap Llewelin* was Prince of North-Wales, and there kept his forces, & Chepstow is in South-Wales; and besides, it is agreed upon all sides, that the Irish landing, spoyled the Ile of Anglesey, laded themselves with spoyles, and going to their ships, were driven to runne and leave all behinde; but to be short, when all the forces joyned together, the Welsh men were overthrowne; the King manned and victualled his Castles, returned into England, gave the Irish men leave to returne, winking a while in policie at the tarriance and slow comming of *Maurice Fitz Girald*: when *Maurice Fitz Girald*, Lord Iustice arrived in Ireland, he found *O Donell* the Irish enemy, upon the death of *Hugh Lacy*, in Armes, invading and sore annoying the Kings subjects in Vlster, and called unto him *Cormake Mac Dermot Mac Dory*, with great forces, and entred Tireconnell, preyed, burned, and spoyled, and vanquished the enemy; there he slue *Moyleslaghlon O Donell*, called King of Keyvayle, together with *Gille Canvillelagh*, *Obugill*, and *Mac Surley*, called King of Oyrisgall, with divers others, gentlemen of those parts: in like sort many English men were cast away in the river, whose passage *O Donell* stopped, and slue there *William Butt*, high Sheriffe of Connaught, together with a valiant young Gentleman his brother. When the Lord Iustice had thus atchieved his purpose, hee manned and victualled the Castle of Sligo, tooke pledges of *O Neale* to keepe the Kings peace, and left them in the said Castle, gave *Cormake*

Dermot Mac Dory that came to his aide, the moytie of Connaught, and returned with a great prey.

When this noble service was performed, the King disgorged himselfe, and what inwardly he had conceived, and for a while conceived against the Lord Iustice, he then in writing delivered, and removed *Maurice Fitz Girald* out of his Iusticeship, and placed in his roome, *Iohn Fitz Ieffery de Morisco*, the which the Irish Chroniclers have suppressed, yet *Florilegus* and *Holinshed* doe write, *Mauritium Hiberniæ Iustitiarium eo quod ficte & tarde auxilium ab hibernia domino Regi duxerat periclitanti a Iustitiaria Deposuit.*

This *Maurice* departed out of this world, *Anno Dom.* 1256. was buried saith *Clyn* in the habit of the Fryers Minors at Yough-halle, the which *Morice* had founded, of whom *Mathew Paris* saith thus; he was a valiant Knight, a very pleasant man, inferiour to none in Ireland, who sometime swayed the land when hee had the sword of Iusticeship; this man lived with commendations all the dayes of his life, but peradventure falsly reported of, and stained in the end with the death of *Richard*, Earle Marshall.

Anno 1247. after that *Henry* the third, and the Clergie of England and Ireland found themselves mightily grieved at the Popes exactions and intollerable extortions in England, Wales, and Ireland, and had signified the same in writing to the Court of Rome;

whereupon saith *Florilegus*, the Court of Rome fretted and sorrowed, that their avarice was as well reproved, as restrained. *Innocentius* 4. devised in his conceit, a milder course to be held, that in stead of a greater summe, they should give him at that time out of those dominions, to supply his wants, but eleven thousand markes. Then saith *Florilegus*, Master *Iohannes Rusus* was sent into Ireland, furnished with authority, diligently to collect the Popes money, as a Legate, yet not clad in scarlet, lest the Pope should offend the King of England, who hath this priviledge, that no Legate set foot on his land, unlesse hee be sent for, or licenced; but the said *Iohn* being a sophisticall Legate, vigilantly plying the papall mandate, and his owne private gaine, extorted out of Ireland, about sixe thousand markes; the which by the conduite of the Clergie, was transported and conveied to London, about the Feast of Saint *Michaell* the Archangell.

The same yeere, saith *Florilegus*, there was a marveilouse and strange Earthquake over England; but saith *Felcon*, over Ireland: And all the West of the world, and there followed immediatly a continuall untemperature of the ayre, with a filthy skurfe; the Winter stormy cold and wet, which continued untill the 11. of *Iuly*, and put the Gardeners, Fruterers, and Husbandmen void of all hope, in so much they complained that Winter was turned to Summer, and Summer to Winter, and that they were like to lose all, and bee undone.

Anno 1252. saith *Dowling* and *Grace*, and the English *Anonimus*, but *Clyn* and *Florilegus* write, that it was 1254. King *Henry* gave to Prince *Edward* his sonne, Gascoignie, Ireland, Wales, Bristow, Stanford and Grantham, and sent him to *Alphonsus* King of Spaine, to take *Ellionor* his sister to wife, where hee was by the said King Knighted, and returned together with his wife into England, with great riches.

Anno 1255. *Alanus de la Zouch*, was made Lord Iustice; so I finde in the Booke of *Houth*, after his departure out of Ireland, hee being a Lord Baron, and chiefe Iustice in England; *Florilegus*, *Humfrey Loid* and *Stow*, doe write the Story how hee came to his end; great strife rose in England, betweene certaine of the Nobility, about territories lands and titles, whereto each side made claime; the matters in controversie, by direction from the King were decided in Westminster Hall; the first Controversie was betweene *Iohn* Earle of Surrey and Warren, and *Hugh de Lacy*. Earle of Lincolne, which went upon *Lacy* his side. The second was, betweene this Earle *Warren* and *Allan de la Zouch*, this *Zouch* being Chiefe Iustice asked Earle *Warren*, how he held his land, Earle *Warren* drew foorth his sword and said, by this mine Ancestors held the same, and by this I presently hold it, and with that ranne the Chiefe Iustice through in Westminster Hall, and in his flight wounded also his sonne; thence hee fled to his Castle at Risgate, whome Prince *Edward* the Kings eldest sonne pursued with

an Army; to whom the Earle submitted himselfe, and afterwards with friends, and what with money pacified all.

Anno 1256. in the warres of *Lewelin* Prince of Wales, so I find in the records of *Conway* & *Stratflur* Copied by *Gettine Owen*. *Edward* Earle of Chester, fell to outrage one while against the King. another while against the Welshmen; his Army was 1500. foot and 500. horse. *Henry* the third together with *Richard* Earle of Cornewall, and King of Almane wrote unto him gently, wishing him to returne to his Country and keepe the peace, and not to provoke the Welshmen to Armes; the which he refused to doe, but sent to the Irishmen for succour and supplies. Prince *Edward* the Kings eldest sonne, understanding thereof, rigged a Navy, met with the Irish fleet, killed their men and sunck their ships, few onely remaining to returne, and to make report of this hard successe in Ireland; In a while after, the King raised warres against *Lewellin* Prince of Wales, and the Welshmen (saith *Paris*, *Causa autem eorum etiam hostibus eorum justa videbatur*;) and was brought to a narrow straight, so that he sent to Ireland, and to Gascoigne for succour; the Irishmen not forgetting their late overthrow, were loath to come (being of all sides driven to serve) in the end came, and joyned with their Kings forces, where no memorable act was performed, for God, saith *Paris*, defended the poore people that put their whole confidence in him.

About this time, to wit, *Anno* 1256. Florished *Iohannes De Sacro Bosco; Bale* out of *Leland*, will have him to be a Yorkeshire man, and terme him *Iohn Holyfaxe*, *Stanihurst* writeth he was borne in Ireland at Holy Wood, in Fingall, some 12. miles from Dublin, and therefore called *Iohannes De Sacro Bosco*, which carried great likly-hood with it, untill they are reconciled (which side prevaileth, I waigh not greatly) I thought good to insert him, for so much as his great learning graced him unto the posterity: In his springing yeeres hee suckt the sweet milk of good learning, in the famous Vniversity of Oxford; afterwards he went to Paris, where he professed the learned Sciences, with singular commendations, and there slumbreth in the dust of the earth, whose exequies and funerals were there with great lamentations solemnized: first, hee followed *Aristotle*, afterwards gave himselfe to the *Mathematikes*, and addicted himselfe so much thereto, that none of the posterity (as is thought) could follow him; hee wrote.

De Spæra Mundi-lib. 1. *Tractatum de spæra, quatuor.*
De Algorismo——lib. 1. *Omnia quæ a primeva rerum orig.*
De Anni Ratione-lib. 1. *Computus scientiam considerans.*
Breviarium Iuris--lib. 1. *Verborum superficie penitus.*

Vpon his Tombe together with the Mathematicall Astrolabe, was insculped as followeth.

M. Christi bis. C. quarto deno quater anno,
De Sacro Bosco discrevit tempora ramus,
Gratia cui nomen dederat divina Iohannes.

Anno 1258. *Stepham Espee, alias De longa spatha,* that is *Stepham* with the long skeine or two handed sword, Earle of Salibury, as I suppose, was made Lord Iustice of Ireland; this *Stepham* gave battell unto *Oneile*, and the rebels of Vlster and Conaght, and slue of them together with *Oneile* (saith *Clinne*) in one day, three hundred fifty and two, and departed this life, saith *Florilegus*, 1260.

Anno 1260. *William Denne* was made Lord Iustice, in whose time Greene Castle, *Arx Viridis* was destroyed, and the *Carties* plaied the Divells in Desmond, where they burned, spoiled, preyed, and slue many an innocent; they became so strong, and prevailed so mightily that for the space (so it is reported) of twelue yeeres the Desmonds durst not put plow in ground in his owne Country; at length through the operation of Satan, a bane of discord was throwen betweene the *Carties* and the *Odriscoles: Odonovaies Mac Donoch, Mac Mahonna, Mac Swines,* and the inhabittants of Muscrie, in so much that by their cruell dissention, they weakened themselves of all sides, that the Desmond in the end overcame and overtopped them all; but in the beginning of these garboils, I find that the *Carties* slue of the *Desmonds, Iohn Fitz Thomas* founder of the Monastery and Covent of Trally, together with *Maurice* his sonne; eight Barons 15. Knights, beside infinite others, at a place called Callan, where they were buried. Mine Authors are *Iohn Clinne* onely, and the Booke, of *Houth.* In the end of these

tumults, dyed Sir *William Denny* Lord Iustice, *Anno* 1261. *Richardus de Capella*, otherwise called *Rochell* (*Clinne* calleth him *La Rochell de Capella*) became Lord Iustice of Ireland.

Anno 1262. There rose in Dublin a great stirre betweene the Prior and Covent of the blessed Trinity now called Christ-Church, and the Communalty of the City, about the tithe fish of the Liffy.

Anno 1264. *Walter Bourke*, commonly called *Walterus de Burgo* (spoken of before) was made Earle of Vlster, hee had married the daughter and heire of Sir *Hugh Delacy* the younger, and in her right enjoyed the Earledome.

The Booke of *Houth* layeth downe the descent, that this *Walter* by the said heire of Vlster had issue *Walter*, and hee had issue five daughters; 1. *Ellen* that married *Robert le Bruse* King of Scotland; 2. *Elizabeth*, that married the Earle of Gloster; 3. *Iohan*, that married *Thomas* Earle of Kildare; 4. *Katherine*, that married the Earle of Louth; 5. *Margaret*, that married the Earle of Desmond; the 6. *Ellinor*, that married with the Lord *Multon*, notwithstanding these honourable matches and amity concluded in the outward sight of the world there rose deadly warres between the *Giraldins* and *Burks*, which wrought blood sheds, troubles by partaking throughout the Realme of Ireland; at the same time the fury of the *Giraldins* was

so outrageous, in so much that *Morice Fitz Maurice* the second, Earle of Desmond, opposed himselfe against the sword, and tooke at Trisledermote now called Castle Dermocke; *Richard de Capella* the Lord Iustice, *Theoball le Butler* and *Iohn* or *Millis de Cogan*, and committed them to the prisons in Leix and Donamus; but the yeere following, *Henry* the third not pleased with these commotions and hurly burlies, by mature advice taken of his Councell, pacified the variance betweene them; discharged *Denny* of his Iusticeship, and appointed *David Barry* Lord Iustice in his place.

Anno 1267. *David Barry* tooke, by the appointment of the King, the sword of Iusticeship and the command of Ireland, and quelled or tamed (saith the English Anonymos) the insolent dealing of *Morice Fitz Maurice*, Cousin german to *Girald.*

The same yeere, saith (*Iohn Clinne*) the Fryers Preachers, first of all settled themselves at Rosse in Wexford, and the Minors at Kilkennie, and two yeeres after at Clonemell.

Anno 1268. *Conochur Obrian* was slaine by *Dermót Mac Monard;* and the same yeere (saith *Felcon* and *Clinne*) *Maurice Fitz Gerald* Earle of Desmond, was drowned crossing the seas between England and Ireland, leaving behind him a sonne and heire, of the age of 3. yeeres and a halfe.

The same yeere, *Robert Vfford* became Lord Iustice of Ireland, and began to build the Castle of Roscommon.

Anno 1269. *Richard de Excester* was made Lord Iustice, who dyed the same yeere, together with his wife *Margery de Say;* the same yeere (saith *Florilegus*) *Othobone* the Popes Legat, held a Councell at Paules in London, where he called before him the Clergy of England, Wales, Ireland and Scotland, and left among them certaine constitutions, which were afterward, commended by *Linwood*, and are at this day in request, the which constitutions of *Otho* and *Othobon*, were afterwards confirmed by the Archbishop of Canterbury in *Ed.* 1. raigne. *Holinshed.*

Anno 1270. The Lord *Iames Audley* was made Lord Iustice of Ireland, and dyed with the fall of a horse; in his time *Florilegus* and *Holinshed* note, there was great commotion in Ireland, the Irish tooke Armes against the English, burned, spoiled, destroied and slue as well the Magistrates as others. *Clinne* goeth more particularly to worke, and delivereth how that the King of Conaght by force of Armes, in the plaine field overthrew *Walter Burke* Earle of Vlster, who hardly escaped with life, yet dyed the yeere following, and slue a great number of Nobles, and Knights, that held with the *Burk*, and among others, by speciall name the Lord *Richard Verdon*, and the Lord

Iohn Verdon, and that there ensued over all Ireland great famine and pestilence, as the sequell of warres.

About this time, say our Antiquaries, the Bishop of Rome sent to Ireland, requiring the tithes of all spirituall promotions for 3. yeeres to come to maintaine his warres against the King of Aragon, the which was greatly murmured at, and gainesaid, yet the Nuntio went not empty away.

Anno 1272. the most renowned King *Henry* the third, having lived 65. yeeres, and raigned 56. and 28. dayes, ended his dayes, and was buried at Westminster. *Edward*, the first of that name, sonne of King *Henry* the third, surnamed *Long-shankes*, of the age of 35. yeers, began his raigne, *Anno* 1272.

Anno 1272. and the first of *Edward* the first his raigne, *Maurice Fitz Maurice* was made Lord Iustice, in whose time the Irish brake out into cruell rebellion, rased and destroyed the Castles of Aldleeke, Roscommon, Scheligath and Randon; this *Maurice*, (saith *Clyn*) not long after was betrayed by his owne followers in Ophali, taken and imprisoned.

Anno 1273. the Lord *Walter Genvill* (who lately returned home from the Holy Land) was sent into Ireland, and appointed Lord Iustice: in his time (so write *Dowlinge* and *Grace*) the Scots and Red-shankes out

of the high land crossed the seas, burned townes and villages, most cruelly killed man, woman and childe, tooke a great prey, and returned home afore the country could make preparation to pursue them: but in a while after, to bee revenged of them, Vlster and Connaught mustred a great Armie under the leading of *Richardus de Burgo*, and Sir *Eustace le Poer* knight, made after them, entred the Islands, and high land of Scotland, slue as many as they could finde, burned their Cabbans and Cottages, and such as dwelt in caves and rockes under ground (as the manner is to denne out Foxes) they fired and smothered to death, covering their entrances into the ground with great and huge stones, and so returned into Ireland.

Anno 1276. what time *Thomas Clare* came into Ireland, and married the daughter of *Maurice Fitz Maurice*. The Castle of Roscommon was taken by the Irish, and a great overthrow given vnto the English men at Glynburry (Glandelory, saith *Clyn*) where *William Fitz Roger*, Prior of the Kings hospitallers, and many others, were taken prisoners, and a great number of others were slaine; at what time also *Ralph Pepard*, and *Otholand* gave *O Neale* a sore battaile.

Anno 1277. *Walter* Lord *Genuill* was sent for into England, and *Robert Vfford* the second time tooke the office of Iusticeship; at this time *Muridath* or

Murtagh, a notable rebell, was taken at the Noraght, by *Gualter de Fant*, and executed: *Thomas Clare* likewise in this rebellion, slue *Obryan Roe*, King of Thomond, and yet after this, the Irish drew such a draught, that they closed him up in Slew Banny, together with *Maurice Fitz Maurice* his father in law, and all their forces, untill they gave hostages to escape with their lives, upon condition to make satisfaction for the death of *O brian* and his followers, and in the meane while to yeeld them up the Castle of Roscommon, although the conditions seemed hard & prejudiciall to the Kings Maiesty, yet were they driven for safeguard of their lives to condiscend thereunto. In this rebellious season, to cleere himselfe, that in his owne person he came not to daunt the enemy, *Robert Vfford* the Lord Iustice was sent for into England, who substituted in his roome, one Fryer *Robert Fulborne*, Bishop of Waterford, who when he had cleered himselfe, came and resigned his place of Iusticeship.

Anno 1278. there rose civill warres, no better then rebellion, betweene *Mac Dermot de Moylargo*, and *Cathgur O Conoghor*, King of Connaught, where there was great slaughter and bloud-shed on both sides, and the King of Connaught slaine. *Raphaell Holinshed* in his Irish collection thinketh that there were slaine at that time, above two thousand persons. The King of England hearing thereof, was mightily

displeased with the Lord Iustice, and sent for him into England, to yeeld reason why he would permit such shamefull enormities under his governement. *Robert Vfford* substituted *Robert Fulborne*, (as before) satisfied the King that all was not true that hee was charged withall, and for further contentment, yeelded this reason, that in policie he thought it expedient to winke at one knave cutting off another, and that would save the Kings Coffers, and purchase peace to the land; whereat the King smiled, and bid him returne to Ireland.

Anno 1279. (*Stow* is mine Author) King *Edward* commanded groats of foure pence a piece, pence, halfe pence, and farthings, to be coyned, and to be currant through England and Ireland, not decrying the old; whereupon saith he, these verses were made:

Edward did smite round penny, halfe penny, farthing,
The crosse passes the bond, of all throughout the ring:
The Kings side was his head, and his name written,
The crosse side, what Citie it was made in, coyned and smitten.
The poore manne to Priest, the penny frayses nothing,
Men give God aye the least, they feast him with a farthing:
A thousand two hundred, fourescore yeeres and moe,
On this money men wondred, when it first began to goe.

Anno 1280. the Citie of Waterford saith *Clyn*, through some foule mischance was all set on fire; others report that some Merchant stranger being wronged, as they thought, by the Citizens, brought bagges of

powder out of their ships, and threw them in the night season, in at their sellers windowes, and coales of fire after them, and spoyled the City in that sort, that it was long after ere they could recover themselves.

Anno 1281. *Robert Fulborne* Bishop of Waterford, was by direction from the King, ordained Lord Iustice of Ireland. This yeere there was a great rebellion in Connaught, and in upper Ossory, and in Archloe, which cost many mens lives, but the ringleaders were cut off. *Adam Cusack* slue *William Barret* and his brethren, which contended about lands. In Connaught, *Hogken Mac Gill Patricke* was cut off; in Vppsory, *Murtough Mac Muroch*, with *Art:* his brother, lost their heads at Wickloe, another saith at Artchloe, so *Clyn* and *Dowlinge* doe report.

Anno 1283. (it is remembred by *Clyn* and others) that a great part of Dublin was burned. *Campanile & Capitulum sanctæ Trinitatis*, saith mine Author, the belfrie or steeple and Chapter house of the blessed Trinity, with the Dormiture and Cloyster. Others write that certaine Scots to be revenged upon some Citizens for wronging of them, set Skinner-Row a fire, and by that meanes the fire ranne into Christ Church, but the citizens of Dublin (therein greatly to bee commended) before they went about to repaire their owne private houses, agreed together to make a

collection for repayring the ruine of that antient Church.

Anno 1284. flourished *Ieffery*, or (as *Clyn* writeth) *Galfridus de sancto Leodegario*, Bishop of Ossorie, the second founder of the Cathedrall Church of *Setus Canicus*, and the first founder of the Colledge of the Vicars of the same Church, who gave unto the Colledge and vickars of the same Church, for the maintenance of divine Service, his Manse and lodging, with the edifices thereunto adjoyning, the rectory of Kilkesh, and revenue *de manubrinnio*, one marke sterling, of the Abbot of Duiske, for the land of Scomberlowaie with other revenues. The said *Ieffery* by combate (the combatants I finde not recorded) *anno* 1284. recovered the Mannor of Sirekeran in Elly, now *Ocarolls* country. Hee builded part of the Mannors of Aghboo and Dorogh, he builded a great part of the Church of Saint *Canicus*, formerly begunne by *Hugh Mapilton* his Predecessor, hee exchanged the towne Scomkarthie, for the towne of Killamerry, with *William Marshall* the Earle of Penbroke, in his kinde of devotion he injoyned the collegiat Vicars of Kilkenny to celebrate the universary and aniversary of the reverend fathers his predecessors, *Walter Barkeley*, *Galfrid Turvill*, *Hugh Mapilton*, and others, and his successors and Canons in the said Church of Ossory. He established other things for the good of the Burgesses of Crosse . . . . . in the Irish towne of Kilkenny,

as in the foundation of the Burgesses there more at large doth appeare: he dyed *Anno* 1286. and lyeth buried before the Chappell of our Lady, in the Cathedrall Church.

Thus farre the Collections of Doctor Hanmer. *the Continuation following is taken out of the Chronicles of* Henry Marleburrough.

THE

CHRONICLE

OF

IRELAND.

BY

HENRY MARLEBVRROVGH;

CONTINUED FROM THE COLLECTION OF

DOCTOR MEREDITH HANMER,

In the Yeare

1571.

Dublin:

Printed by the Society of Stationers,

M.DCXXXIII.

REPRINTED AT THE HIBERNIA PRESS,

FOR THE PROPRIETORS,

By John Morrisson.

1809.

HENRY MARLEBVRROVGH'S

CHRONICLE

OF

IRELAND.

ANNO 1285. the Lord *Theobald Butler* fled from Dublin, and died shortly after; and the Lord *Theobald Verdon* lost his men and horses, going towards Ophali, and the next morning, *Girald Fiz Maurice* was taken prisoner, and *Iohn Samforde* was consecrated Archbishop of Dublin, and the Lord *Ieffery Genuill* fled, and Sir *Gerard Doget*, and *Ralph Petit* were slaine.

Anno 1287. deceased *Richard Decetir*, *Girald Fitz Maurice*, *Thomas de Clare*, *Richard Taff*, and *Nicholas Telinge* Knights.

Anno 1288. In England a bushell of Wheate was at foure pence. And Fryer *Stephen Fulburne* Lord Iustice of Ireland dyed. And *Iohn Samford* Archbishop of Dublin was made Lord Iustice. And the Lord *Richard Burgh*, Earle of Vlster, besieged

Theobald Verdon in the Castle of Aloan, and came to Trymm with a great power by the working of *Walter Lacy*.

Anno 1290. Was the chase or discomfiture of Ophaly, and divers Englishmen were slaine. And *Mac Coghlan* slue *Omolaghlin*. And *William Bourgh* was discomfited at Delvin by *Mac Coghlan*. And *Gilbert* Earle of Glocester, married the daughter of King *Iohn le Bayloll*, King of Scotland. And Sir *William Vescy* was made Iustice of Ireland:

Anno 1294. Deceased *Iohn de Samford*, Archbishop of Dublin, and *Iohn Fitz Thomas*, and *Iohn de la Mare* took prisoners, *Richard Bourgh* Earle of Vlster, and *William Bourgh* in Meath. And the Castle of Kildare was taken, and by the English and Irish, the whole countrie was wasted. And *Calwagh* burnt all the rolles and tallyes of that countie. And *Richard* was delivered out of the Castle of Leye for his two sonnes. And *Iohn Fitz Thomas* with a great armie, came into Meath.

Anno 1295. *William Dodinsell* Lord Iustice of Ireland dyed, and the Lord *Thomas Fitz Maurice* was made Lord Iustice.

Anno 1296. Fryer *William de Hothum* was consecrated Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 1298. The Lord *Thomas Fitz Maurice* dyed, and an agreement was made betwixt the Earle of Vlster, and the Lord *Iohn Fitz Thomas:* and Sir *Iohn Wogan* was made Lord Iustice of Ireland.

Anno 1299. *William*, Archbishop of Dublin dyed: and *Richard de Feringes* was consecrated Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 1302. The King of England (*Edward* the first) went into Scotland, and there Sir *Iohn Wogan*, Lord Iustice of Ireland, and the Lord *Iohn Fitz Thomas* with many others met with him.

Anno 1305. King *Edward* made the inquisitions of Treylbaston. The same yeere *Iordan Comin* slue *Conthir de Ophaly:* and *Calwagh* his brother was slaine in the court of *Piers de Birmingham* at Carricke: and Balimor was burnt:

Anno 1306. *Edward* the second succeeded his father being dead, in the kingdome. In the beginning of his raigne, he called back from beyond the seas, *Peirs de Gaveston*, whose company in the presence of his father he abjured: and being wholly taken up with him, he neglected *Isabell* his Queene, and his Nobles; for which cause the Nobles being offended, they banished the said *Peirs* into Ireland, where also the Kings treasure that was sent over thither, was wantonly consumed. Then *Peirs* was called back againe,

but in regard the Kings treasure was spent as aforesaid, the Nobles make an insurrection, and put away *Peirs* from the King.

Anno 1308. And in the second of King *Edward* the second, *Peirs de Gaveston*, by the Lords of England, but contrary to the Kings minde, was banished into Ireland, about the nativitie of our Lady: but the next yeere hee was called backe againe, and the King met him at Chester.

Anno 1309. The Lord *Ieffery Genvill* became a Fryer at Trym, of the order of the Preachers: and the Lord *Peirs de Birmingham* dyed.

Anno 1311. Was the consecration of *Iohn Leeke*, Archbishop of Dublin: and *Richard Bourgh* Earle of Vlster, with a great armie went to Bourath in Thomound, and there he was taken prisoner by Sir *Robert de Clare*, and *Iohn Fitz Walter*, *Lacy*, and many others were slaine: and there dyed Sir *Walter la Faint*, and Sir *Eustace Power*. And the next yeere, *Maurice Fitz Thomas*, and *Thomas Fitz Iohn*, married two daughters of the Earle of Vlster. And Saint *Fingay* was translated; and *William de Lowndres* the first, and *Iohn* the son of Sir *Richard Bourgh* Knight deceased, and the Lord *Edmund Butler* made 30. Knights.

Anno 1313. Died *Iohn Leek*, Archbishop of Dublin,

and *Theobald Verdon* came over Lord Iustice of Ireland, and *Willam de Montency* and *Richard Loundries* died.

Anno 1315. The Lord *Edward Bruse* brother of the King of Scots, entred the north part of *Vlster* with a great Army, upon Saint *Augustines* day, in the month of *May;* and afterward hee burned Dundalke, and a great part of Vrgile: and the church of *Athirde,* was burned by the Irish: and in the warre of Comeram in Vlster, *Richard* Earle of Vlster was put to flight: and Sir *William Bourgh,* and Sir *Iohn Mandevill,* and Sir *Alan Fitz Warren* were taken prisoners, and the Castle of Norburgh was taken. Moreover at Kenlis in Meath, the Lord *Roger Mortimer* in the warre together with the said *Edward* were put to flight, and many of the men men of the said *Roger* were slaine and taken prisoners, and he burnt the Towne: and after this he went as farre as Finnagh and the Skerries in Leinster; and there incountred him *Edmund Butler* Lord Iustice of Ireland, the Lord *Iohn Fitz Thomas,* afterward Earle of Kildare, and the Lord *Arnold Power*; and every one of them had a great army to war against him: and upon the sodaine there arose a dissention amongst them, and so they left the field; and this dissention hapned upon the 26. day of *Ianuary*; after this hee burnt the Castle of Leye, and afterward hee returned into Vlster, and besieged the Castle of Knockfergus, and slue *Thomas Mandevill* and *Iohn* his brother at Downe, comming out of England; and then returned into Scotland

Anno 1316. *Edward Bruse* before Easter, came into Ireland with the Earle of Murry and other armies, and besieged the Castle of Knockfergus; afterward they went to Castle Knock, and there tooke the Baron prisoner, and *Edward Bruse* lay there: and *Richard* Earle of Vlster lay in Saint *Maries* Abbey neere Dublin. Then the Major and the Commonalty of the City of Dublin, tooke the Earle of Vlster prisoner, and put him in the Castle of Dublin and slew his men and spoiled the Abbey. Then the said *Bruse* went as far as Lymmerick after the feast of Saint *Matthew* the Apostle, and staied there until after Easter; and in the meane time *Roger Mortimer* the Kings Lievtenant, landed at Waterford with a great Army, and for feare of him, *Edward Bruse* made haste to goe into the parts of Vlster, and *Iohn Fitz Thomas* was created Earle of Kildare: also *Oconthir* of Conaght and many other of the Irish of Conaght and Meath were slaine, neere Athenry by the English there: also there was a great slaughter made by *Edmond Butler*, neere Testilldermot upon the Irish: and another slaughter by the same *Edmund* upon *Omorthe* at Balitcham.

Anno. 1317. The Lievtenant delivered the Earle of Vlster out of the Castle of Dublin, and after Whitsuntide, hee banished out of Meath Sir *Walter* and Sir *Hugh de Lacy*, and gave their lands unto his souldiers, and they together with *Edward Bruse* went back into Scotland: and *Alexander Bignor* was consecrated Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 1318. The Lord *Roger Mortimer* went againe into England, and *Alexander Bignor* was made Lord Iustice, and *Edward Bruse* and the said *Walter* and *Hugh de Lacy* with a great Army, landed at Dundalke upon Saint *Calixtus* the Popes day; and there the Lord *Iohn Brimingham, Richard Tute* and *Miles Verdon,* with one thousand three hundred twenty foure men incountred them, and slew the said *Edward Bruse,* with eight thousand two hundred seventie foure of his men; and the said *Iohn Birmingham* did cary the head of the said *Edward* into England, and gave it to King *Edward,* and the King gave unto the said *Iohn* and his heires males, the Earledome of Lowth, and the Barony of Athirdee to him and his heires; also Sir *Richard de Clare,* with foure Knights and many others, were slaine in Thomond.

Anno 1319. The said Lord *Roger Mortimer* came over againe Lord Iustice of Ireland. And the Towne of Athessell and Plebs, were burned by the Lord *Iohn Fitz Thomas,* brother to the Lord *Maurice Fitz Thomas.* And the Bridge of Kilcolin was built by *Maurice Iakis.*

Anno 1320. The Lord *Iohn Fitz Iohn,* Earle of Kildare, was made Lord Iustice. And the bridge of Leiglin was built by *Maurice Iakis.*

Anno 1321. There was a very great slaughter made of the *Oconhurs* at Balibagan, by the English of Lein-

ster and Meath. And the said Earle of Lowth was made Lord Iustice.

Anno 1322. Died the Lord *Richard Birmingham*, Lord of Athenry, the Lord *Edmund Butler*, and the Lord *Thomas Persivall*. Moreover the Lord *Andrew Birmingham*, and Sir *Richard de la Londe*, were slaine by *Onolan*.

Anno 1323. *Iohn Darcy* came over Lord Iustice of Ireland.

Anno 1325. Deceased *Nicholas Fitz Simon Gonvill*.

Anno 1326. The Lord *Richard Burgh* Earle of Vlster died: *Edward* the third, sonne to *Edward* the second, after the Conquest, at the age of fifteene yeeres, in his fathers life time; upon Candlemas day was crowned King at Westminster. In the beginning of whose raigne there was great likelyhood of good successe to follow: For then also the Earth received fruitfulnesse, the Ayre temperature and, Sea calmenesse.

Anno 1327. *Donald* sonne to *Art*, *Mac Morch*, and Sir *Henry Traharne* were taken prisoners.

Anno 1328. Deceased the Lord *Thomas Fitz Iohn* Earle of Kildare, and the Lord *Arnold Power*, and *William* Earle of Vlster came into Ireland.

Anno 1329. *Iohn Brimingham* Earle of Lowth, and *Peter* his brother with many other, were slaine on Whitsun, even at Balibragan by the men of the Country: Also the Lord *Thomas Butler*, and divers other Noble men were slaine by *Macgohegan* and other Irishmen, neere Molingar.

Anno 1330. There died Sir *Richard Deicetir*: Also the Earle of Vlster went with a great Army into Mounster upon *Obren:* Also the Prior of the Hospitall, then Lord Iustice, put the Lord *Maurice Fitz Thomas* Earle of Desmond, into the custody of the Marshall, out of the which hee freely escaped. And Sir *Hugh de Lacy* returned into Ireland, and obteined peace of the King.

Anno 1331. The Earle of Vlster went into England, and great slaugher was made upon the Irish in *Okenslie;* also the Castle of Arclow was taken by the Irish, and great slaughter made of the English ni the Cowlagh by *Otothell*, where Sir *Philip Bryt* and many others were slaine; and the Lord *Anthony Lacy* came over Lord Iustice of Ireland, and great slaugter was made of the Irish at Thurles, by the men of the Country, and at Finnath in Meath; there were many of them slaine by the English: also the Castle of Fernis was taken and burned by the Irish: also *Maurice Fitz Thomas* Earle of Desmond was apprehended at Limerick by the Lord Iustice, upon the day of the Assumption, and sent unto the Castle of Dublin. Moreover,

the Lord Iustice tooke Sir *William Birmingham* and *Walter* his sonne at Clomell by a wile, whilest hee was sick in his bed, and sent them likewise unto the Castle of Dublin on the 19. day of *Aprill.*

Anno 1332. Sir *William Birmingham* was hanged at Dublin, but *Walter* his sonne was delivered, by reason hee was within orders. Also the Castle of Clonmore was taken by the English, and the Castle of *Bonrath* was destroyed by the Irish of Thomond: also *Henry Mandevill* was sent prisoner to Dublin; likewise *Walter Burgh* with two of his brethren were taken in Conaght, by the Earle of Vlster, and sent to the Castle of Norburgh: also the said Lord Iustice was deposed by the King, and went into England with his wife and children; and *Iohn Darcy* was made Lord Iustice, and great slaughter was made upon *Bren Obren* and *Mac Carthy* in Munster, by the English of that Country.

Anno 1333. The Earle of Desmond by the Parliament held at Dublin, was sent over into England unto the King; and *VVilliam* Earle of Vlster, in going toward Knockfergus, upon the seventh day of *Iune* was treacherously slaine, neere to the foords in Vlster by his owne people; but his wife with his daughter and heire, escaped into England; which daughter was married unto the Lord *Lionell*, the Kings sonne, and afterward died at Dublin; and had a daughter and heire, which was afterward married unto *Roger Mortimer*,

Earle of March, and Lord of Trim: And to revenge the death of the said Earle, the Lord Iustice of Ireland with a great Army, went into Vlster. But before that hee came thither, the men of that Country had done the revenge: and the Lord Iustice with his Army, went into Scotland to the King of England; because at that time hee was there in warre; and hee left the Lord *Thomas Burgh* his Lievtenant in Ireland: also on Saint *Margarets* Eve, great slaughter was made in Scotland by the Irish; and so what by the King in one part, and the Lord Iustice in another, Scotland was Conquered, and *Edward Balioll* was established King of Scotland; and *Iohn Darcy* came back Lord Iustice of Ireland, and delivered *VValter Birmingham* out of the Castle of Dublin.

Anno 1336. On Saint *Laurence* day, the Irish of Conaght were discomfited and put to flight by the English of the Country there, and there were slaine tenne thousand and one Englishman.

Anno 1342. And in the sixteenth of King *Edward* the 3. Pope *Benedict* deceased; *Clement* the sixth succeeded, a man truly of great learning, but exceeding prodigall, so that hee would bestow upon his Cardinals Church livings in England when they were vacant, and would goe about to impose new titles for them. For which cause the King of England about the yeere 1344. disannulled the provisions so made by

the Pope, interdicting upon paine of imprisonment, and death, that none should bring any of them.

Anno 1348. There was great mortality in all places, especially in and about the Court of Rome, Avinion, and about the sea coastes of England and Ireland.

Anno 1349. Deceased *Alexander Bignor*, upon the foureteenth day of *Iuly*, and the same yeere was *Iohn de Saint Paul* consecrated Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 1355. Died *Maurice Fitz Thomas*, Earle of Desmond, L: Iustice of Ireland.

Anno 1536. Deceased the Lord *Thomas de Rokesbie*, L. Iustice of Ireland.

Anno 1357. Began great variance betwixt Master *Richard Fitz Ralphe* Primat of Ardmagh, and the foure Orders of begging Fryers.

Anno 1360. Deceaded *Richard* Archbishop of Ardmagh, upon the seventeenth day of the Kalends of *December* in the Popes Court, and *Richard Kilminton* dyed in England, therefore the controversie ceased betwixt the Clergie and the orders of begging Fryers.

Anno 1361: and in the thirty fourth yeere of K.

Edward the third, about Easter, began a great mortalitie of men, consuming many men, but few women, in England and Ireland. Also the same yeere, the Lord *Lionell*, Sonne to King *Edward* the third, Duke of Clarence, came over the Kings lievetenant into Ireland.

Anno 1362. deceased *Iohn de Saint Paule*, Archbishop of Dublin, on the fift day before the Ides of September.

Anno 1363: *Thomas Minot* was consecrated Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 1369. the Lord *William Windsor* came over the Kings Lievtenant in Ireland.

Anno 1370. there was a third great Pestilence in Ireland. And the Lord *Gerald Fitz Maurice*, Earle of Desmond, and the Lord *Iohn Fitz Richard*, and the Lord *Iohn Fitz Iohn*, and many other Noble men, were taken prisoners, and many others were slaine by *Obren* and *Maccoinnard* of Thomond, in the moneth of Iuly.

Anno 1372. Sir *Robert Asheton* came over Lord Iustice of Ireland.

Anno 1373. there was great warre betwixt the

English of Meth, and Offerolle; in which warre, many upon both sides were slaine,

Anno 1375. *Thomas*, Archbishop of Dublin departed this life, and the same yeere was *Richard de Wikeford* consecrated Archbishop there.

Anno 1381, *Edmund Mortimer* the Kings Lievetenant in Ireland, Earle of March and Vlster, dyet at Corke.

Anno 1383. the fourth great pestilence was in Ireland.

Anno 1385. Dublin Bridge fell.

Anno 1387. about Martilmas, the Peeres of England rose against those that were of the side of *Richard* the second: but *Robert Veer*, Duke of Ireland, came over to Chester, and got together many men, and put them in array to march backe toward the King: whom the said Peeres met at Rotcotebridge, and slue *Thomas Molleners*, and spoyled the rest: neverthelesse, the Duke of Ireland escaped. But in the same yeere on the morrow after Candlemas day, a Parliament beganne at London: in which were adjudged the Archbishop of Yorke, the Duke of Ireland, the Earle of Suffolke, &c.

Anno 1388. foure Lord Iustices of England, were

banished into Ireland, by a decree of the Parliament: and it was not lawfull for them either to makes lawes, or to give counsell, upon paine of the sentence of death.

Anno 1390. *Robert de Wikeford* Archbishop of Dublin, departed this life, and the same yeere was *Robert Waldebie* translated unto the Archbishopricke of Dublin, being an Augustine Fryer.

Anno 1394. and in the seaventeenth yeere of King *Richard* the second, died *Anne*, Queene of England: and the same yeere about Michaelmas, the King crossed the seas over into Ireland, and landed at Waterford the second day of the moneth of October, and went back about Shrovetide.

Anno 1397. Fryer *Richard de Northalis*, of the order of the Carmelites, was translated to the Archbishopricke of Dublin and died the same yeere. Also the same yeere, *Thomas de Craulie*, was consecrated Archbishop of Dublin. And Sir *Thomas Burgh*, and Sir *Walter Birmingham* slue sixe hundred Irish men with their Captaine *Macdowne*. Moreover, *Edmund* Earle of March, Lord lievetenant of Ireland, with the aide of the Earle of Ormond, wasted *Obren's* country, and at the winning of his chiefe house, hee made seaven Knights, to wit, Sir *Christopher Preston*, Sir *Iohn Bedlow*, Sir *Edmund Loundres*, Sir *Iohn Loundres*, Sir *William Nugent*, *Walter de la Hide*, and *Robert Cadell*.

Anno 1398. and in the two and twentieth of King *Richard* the second, on Ascention day, the Tothillis slue forty English men. Among whom these were accounted as principall, *Iohn Fitz Williams*, *Thomas Talbot*, and *Thomas Comyn*. The same yeere upon Saint *Margarets* day, *Edmund*, Earle of March, the Kings lievetenant, was slaine, with divers other by *Obren*, and other Irishmen of Leinster, at Kenlis in Leinster. Then was *Roger Greye* electcd Lord Iustice of Ireland. The same yeere on the feast day of Saint *Marke*, the Pope and Confessor came to Dublin, the noble Duke of Surrey, the Kings lievetenant in Ireland, and with him came *Thomas Crauly*, Archbishop of Dublin.

Anno 1399. and of King *Richard* the three and twentieth, on Sunday being the morrow after Saint *Petronilla* the Virgins day, the illustrious King *Richard* landed at Waterford with two hundred shippes: and the Friday after, at Ford in Kenlis, in the Countie of Kildare, there were slaine, two hundred Irish men by *Ienicho* and other English men, and the morrow after, the Citizens of Dublin brake into *Obrens* country, slue three and thirty of the Irish, and tooke fourescore men, women, and children. The same yeere King *Richard* came to Dublin upon the fourth Kalends of Iuly, where hee was advertized of the comming of *Henry*, Duke of Lancaster into England; whereupon he also speedily went over into England:

and a little while after, the same King was taken prisoner by the said *Henry*, and brought to London, and there a Parliament was holden the morrow after Michaelmas day, in which King *Richard* was deposed from his kingdome, and the said *Henry*, Duke of Lancaster, was crowned King of England, on the feast day of Saint *Edward* the Confessor.

Anno 1400. and in the first yeere of the raigne of King *Henry* the fourth, at Whitsontide, the Constable of Dublin Castle, and divers others at Stranford in Vlster, fought at Sea with the Scots, where many Englishmen were slaine and drowned. The same yeere on the feast of the Assumption of the blessed Virgin *Mary*, King *Henry*, with a great army, entred Scotland, and there he was advertized that *Owen Glendor*, with the Welsh men, had taken armes against him: for which cause he hastened his iourney into Wales.

Anno 1401. in the second yeere of King *Henry* the fourth, Sir *Iohn Stanley* the kings Lievetenant, in the moneth of May, went over into England, leaving in his roome Sir *William Stanley*. The same yeere on Bartholomew Eeven, arrived in Ireland, *Stephen Scroope*, Lievetenant unto the Lord *Thomas* of Lancaster, the kings Lievetenant of Ireland. The same yeere on Saint *Brices* day, the Lord *Thomas* of Lancaster, the kings Sonne, and Lord Lievetenant of Ireland, arrived at Dublin.

Anno 1402. on the fift Ides of Iuly, was the dedication of the Church of the Fryers Preachers in Dublin, by the Archbishop of Dublin. And the same day the Maior of Dublin, namely, *Iohn Drake*, with the citizens and townesmen, neere to Bre, slue of the Irish, foure hundred ninety three, being all men of warre. The same yeere in September a Parliament was held at Dublin; during the which, in Vrgile, Sir *Bartholomew Verdon*, knight, *Iames White*, *Stephen Gernond*, and their complies, slue *Iohn Dowdall* Sheriffe of Lowth.

Anno 1403. in the fourth yeere of King *Henry*, in the moneth of May, Sir *Valter Betterley*, Steward of Vlster, a right valiant knight, was slaine, and to the number of thirty other with him. The same yeere on Saint *Maudlins* Eeven, neere unto Shrewesbury, a battell was fought betweene king *Henry*, and *Henry Percy*, and *Thomas Percy* then Earle of Worcester; which *Percyes* were slaine, and on both sides there were sixe thousand and more slaine in the battaile. The same yeere about Martlemas, the Lord *Thomas* of Lancaster, the kings Sonne, went over into England, leaving *Stephen Scroope* his Deputy there: who also in the beginning of Lent, sayled over into England, and then the Lords of the land chose the Earle of Ormond to be Lord Iustice of Ireland.

Anno 1404. in the fift yeere of king *Henry*, *Iohn Colton*, Archbishop of Armagh, departed this life upon

the fift of May, unto whom *Nicholas Flemming* succeeded. The same yeere on the day of Saint *Vitall* the Martyr, the Parliament began at Dublin, before the Earle of Ormond, then Lord Iustice of Ireland, where the Statutes of Kilkenny and Dublin were confirmed, and likewise the Charter of Ireland. The same yeere *Patricke Savage* was treacherously slaine in Vlster, by *Mac Kilmori*, and his brother *Richard* was given for a pledge, who was murthered in the prison, after hee had paid two thousand markes. The same yeere upon Martilmas day, deceased *Nicholas Houth*, Lord of Houth, a man of singular honesty.

Anno 1405. in the sixt yeere of King *Henry*, in the moneth of May, three Scottish Barkes were taken, two at Greenecastle, and one at Dalkay, with Captaine *Thomas Macgolagh*. The same yeere the Merchants of Droghedah entred Scotland, and tooke pledges and preyes. The same yeere on the Eeven of the feast day of the seaven brethren, Oghgard was burnt by the Irish. The same yeere in the moneth of Iune, *Stephen Scroope* crossed the seas over into England, leaving the Earle of Ormond, Lord Iustice of Ireland. The same yeere in the moneth of Iune, they of Dublin entred Scotland at Saint *Ninian*, and valiantly behaved themselves: and afterward they entred Wales, and there did much hurt to the Welch men, and brought away the shrine of Saint *Cubius*, and placed it in the Church of the holy Trinitie in Dublin. The same yeere on the Eeven of the feast of the blessed Virgin, *Iames Butler*, Earle

of Ormond, dyed at Raligauran, (whose death was much lamented) whilest hee was Lord Iustice of Ireland, unto whom succeeded *Girald*, Earle of Kildare.

Anno 1406. in the seaventh yeere of King *Henry*, on *Corpus Christi* day, the citizens of Dublin, with the country people about them, manfully vanquished the Irish enemies, and slue divers of them, and tooke two Ensignes, bringing with them to Dublin, the heads of those whom they had slaine. The same yeere the Prior of Conall, in the Plaine of Kildare, fought valiantly, and vanquished two hundred of the Irish that were well armed, slaying some of them, and chasing others; and the Pryor had not with him, but twenty Englishmen: and thus God assisteth those that put their trust in him. The same yeere after Michaelmas, came into Ireland, *Scroope*, Deputie Iustice to the Lord *Thomas* of Lancaster, the Kings Sonne, Lord Lievetenant of Ireland. The same yeere dyed *Innocent* the seaventh, to whom succeeded *Gregorie* in the Popedome. The same yeere a Parliament was holden at Dublin, on the feast of Saint *Hillary*, which in Lent after was ended at Trym, and *Meiler Bermingham* slue *Cathole O Conghir*, in the end of Frebruary; and there dyed Sir *Ieffery Vaulx*, a Noble Knight in the Countie of Carlogh.

Anno 1407. a certaine most false fellow, an Irish man, named *Mac Adam Mac Gilmori*, that had caused forty Churches to be destroyed, who was never baptized, and therefore hee was called *Corbi;* tooke pri-

soner *Patricke Savage*, and received for his ransome, two thousand markes, and afterwards slue him, together with his Brother *Richard*.

The same yeere, in the feast of the exaltation of the holy Crosse, *Stephen Scroope*, Deputy to the Lord *Thomas* of Lancaster, the Kings Sonne, Lord Lievtenant of Ireland, with the Earles of Ormond and Desmond, and the Prior of Kilmainan and divers other Captaines, and men of warre of Meath, set from Dublin, and invaded the land of Mac Murch, where the Irish had the better part of the field for the former part of the day, but afterwards they were valiantly rescued by the said Captaines, so that *Onolad* with his sonne and divers others, were taken prisoners. But then and there being advertised that the *Burkens* and *O keroll*, in the County of Kilkenny, had for the space of two dayes together done mischiefe, they rode with all speed unto the Towne of Callan, and there encountring with the adversaries, manfully put them to flight, slue *Okeroll* and eight hundred others; and it was averred by many, that the Sunne stoodstill for a space that day, till the Englishmen had ridden 6. miles, which was much to be wondred at.

The same yeere, *Stephen Scrope* went over into England, and *Iames Butler* Earle of Ormond, was elected by the Country *L. I.* of Ireland.

The same yeere, in England neere unto Yorke, was

slaine *Henry Percy* Earle of Northumberland, and the Lord *Bardolf*, and the Bishop of Bangor, were taken prisoners.

Anno 1408. The said Lord Iustice held a Parliament at Dublin, in which the Statutes of Kilkenny and Dublin were established, and the Charter granted under the great Seale of England against Purveiors.

The same yeere, the morrow after *Lammas* day, the Lord *Thomas* of Lancaster the Kings sonne, Lord Lievtenant of Ireland, landed at Carlingford, and in the weeke following, he came unto Dublin and arrested the Earle of Kildare, comming to him with three of his familie; hee lost all his goods, being spoiled and rifled by the Lord Lievtenant his servants, and himselfe kept still in the Castle of Dublin, till he had paid three hundred markes fine.

The same yeere on the day of Saint *Marcell* the Martyr, the L. *Stephen Scrope* died at Tristledermot.

The same yeere, the said L. *Thomas* of Lancaster, at Kilmainan was wounded, and hardly escaped death; and after caused summons to be given by Proclamation, that all such as ought by their tenures to serve the King, should assemble at Rosse: and after the Feast of Saint *Hillary*, he held a Parliament at Kilkenny, for a tallage to be granted; and after the 13. of

March he went over into England, leaving the Prior of Kilmainan his Deputy in Ireland.

This yeere, *Hugh Mac Gilmore* was slaine in Cragfergus within the Church of the Fryers Minors, which Church hee had before destroyed, and broken downe the Glasse-windowes, to have the Iron barres, through which his enemies the Savages entred upon him.

Anno 1409. Of King *Henry* the fourth in *Iune*, *Ianico de Artois*, with the Englishmen slue fourescore of the Irish in Vlster.

The same yeere, on the day of Saint *Iohn* and *Paul*, *Alexander* the fifth of the Order of Fryers Minors was consecrated Pope, and Pope *Gregory* and Antipope *Clemens* were condemned for heretickes: and by these meanes unity was made in the Church.

The same yeere a heretick or Lollard of London was burned, becsuse he did not beleeve in the sacrament of the altar.

Anno 1410. Pope *Alexander* died on the day of the Apostles *Philippe* and *Iacob*, at Bononia; to whom succeeded *Iohn* the XXIII.

Anno 1411. On Thursday before *Septuagesima*, marriage was celebrated betwixt *William Preston* and the daughter of *Edward Paris*; and on Saint *Valen-*

tines even and day, marriages were celebrated between *Iohn Wogan* and the daughter of *Christopher Preston* and *Walter de la Hide*, and the second daughter of the same *Christopher*, with a great deale of charges.

Anno 1412. About the feast of *Tiburtius* and *Valerianus*, *Oconthird* did much mischiefe in Meath, and tooke a hundred and three score Englishmen.

The same yeere *Odoles* a Knight and *Thomas Fitz Maurice* Sherife of Limerick slue each other.

The same yeere, on the nineth Kalends of *Iune*, there died *Robert Mountaine* Bishop of Meath, to whom succeeded *Edward Dandisey* sometimes Archdeacon of Cornward.

The same yeere in Harvest, the Lord *Thomas* of Lancester Duke of Clarence, went over into France, and with him went the Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Ormond and Green-Cornwall with many others.

The same yeere, on Saint *Cutberts* day, King *Henry* the fourth departed this life. To whom succeeded *Henry* the fifth his eldest sonne.

Anno 1413. On the fifth Ides of *Aprill*, namely, the first Sunday of the Passion of our Lord, *A.* being the Dominicall letter, *Henry* the fifth, was crowned King of England at Westminster.

The same yeere, on the first of *October*, there landed in Ireland at Clontarf, *Iohn Stanley* the Kings Lievtenant in Ireland; he departed this life the 18. of *Ianuary*.

The same yeere, after the death of *Iohn Stanly* Lievtenant, *Thomas Crawly* Archbishop of Dublin, was chosen Lord Iustice of Ireland, on the 11. Kalends of February; the morrow after Saint *Mathias* day, a Parliament began at Dublin, and continued for the space of 15. daies. In which time the Irish burned all that stood in their way, as their usuall custome was in times of other Parliaments: whereupon a tallage was demaunded but not granted.

Anno 1414. The English slue of the Irish of the Omordris and Odemsis, neer to Kilka, *Thomas Crawly* Archbishop of Dublin, then Lord Iustice of Ireland, in Tristledermot, praying in Procession with his Clergy, and his men, with the helpe of those of the Country, slue one hundred of the Irish enemies. In the feast of Saint *Gordian* and *Epimachus*, the English of Meath were discomfited, and there *Thomas Manrevard* Baron of Skrine was slaine, and *Christopher Flemnig* and *Iohn Dardis* taken prisoners, and many others were slaine by *Oconthir* and the Irish. On Saint *Martins* Eve, Sir *Iohn Talbot*, Lord *Furnivall*, the Kings Lievtenant in Ireland landed at Dalkey.

Anno 1415: In the moneth of *November* a right

noble man that walled the suburbs of Kilkenny departed this life; and after Hallontide Fryer *Patricke Baret* Bishop of Fernes a Canon of Kenlis dyed, and was buried there.

Anno 1416. On the feast day of Saint *Gervasius* and *Prothasius* the Lord *Furnivall* Lord Iustice of Ireland, had a sonne borne at Finglasse; about this time *Stephen Flemming* Archbishop of Armagh, a venerable man died, after whom succeeded *Iohn Suaing:* And the same time dyed the Lord and Fryer *Adam Leins,* of the Order of the Preaching Fryers, Bishop of Ardmagh. On the day of Saint *Laurence* the Martyr, the Lord *Furnivals* sonne *Thomas Talbot,* that was borne at Finglasse departed this life, and was buried in the Quire of the Fryers Preachers Church in Dublin. About the same time the Irish fell upon the Englishmen and slue many of them, among whom *Thomas Balimore* of Baliquelan was one The Parliament which the last yeere had beene called and holden at Dublin; was this yeere removed to Trim, and there began the 11. of *May,* where it continued for the space of 11. dayes, in the which was granted unto the L. L. a subsidy of foure hundred markes.

Anno 1417. Vpon *May* Eve *Thomas Granly* Archbishop of Dublin, went over into England, and deceased at Faringdon, but his body was buried in the New Colledge at Oxford. This man is greatly praised for his liberality, he was a good almes-man, a great

Clerk, a Doctor of Divinity, an excellent Preacher, a great builder, beautifull, courteous, of a sanguine complexion, and of a tall stature, insomuch as in his time it might be said unto him; *Thou art fairer then the sons of men, grace and eloquence proceeded from thy lips:* He was 80. yeeres of age when he died, and had governed the Church of Dublin almost 20. yeeres in great quiet.

Anno 1418. The Annunciation of our Lady was in Easter weeke, and shortly after, the Lord Deputy spoiled the tenants of *Henry Crus* and *Henry Bethat;* also at Slane upon the feast day of S. *Iohn* and S. *Paul,* the Earle of Kildare, Sir *Christopher Preston,* and Sir *Iohn Bedlow* were arrested and committed to ward, within the Castle of Trim, because they sought to commune with the Prior of Kilmaynan. Vpon the 29. of *Iune, Mathew Husseil* Baron of Galtrim deceased, and was buried in the Covent of the Fryers Preachers of Trim.

Anno 1419. upon the eleventh of *May,* dayed *Edmund Brel* sometime Major of Dublin, and was buried at the Fryers Preachers of the same City. A Royall Councell was holden at the Naas, where were granted unto the Lord Lievtenant 300. markes. At the same time died Sir *Iohn Loundres* Knight.

The same yeere upon Cene thursday, *Othoill* tooke

fowre hundred Cowes belonging unto *Balimore*, breaking the peace, contrary to his oath. The fourth Ides of *May*, *Mac Morthe*, chiefe Captaine of his Nation, and of all the Irish in Leinster, was taken prisoner. And the same day, was Sir *Hugh Cokesey* made Knight The last of *May*, the Lord Lievtenant and the Archbishop of Dublin, with the Major, rased the Castle of Kenini. The morrow after the feast of *Processus* and *Martinianus*, the Lord *William de Bugh* and other Euglishmen, slue five hundred of the Irish, and tooke Okelly. On the feast day of *Mary Magdalen*, the Lord Lievtenant *Iohn Talbot* went over into England; leaving his Deputy there the Archbishop of Dublin, carrying along with him the curses of many, because hee being runne much in debt for victuall and divers other things, would pay little or nothing at all About Saint *Laurence* day, divers dyed in Normandy, as Fryer *Thomas Butler*, that was Prior of Kilmainan, and many others. Whom Fryer *Iohn Fitz Henry* succeeded in the Priory. The Archbishop of Dublin, being Lord Deputy, made an assault upon Scohies, and slue thirtie of the Irish, neere unto Rodiston. Also the thirteenth of February, *Iohn Fitz Henry*, Prior of Kilmainan departed this life; and *William Fitz Thomas* was chosen to succeed in his place, & was confirmed the morrow after Saint *Velentines* day. Also the morrow after*
the Lord *Iohn Talbot* Lord *Furnivall* delivered up his

* A blank in the original copy. EDITOR.

place into the hands of the Lord *Richard Talbot* Archbishop of Dublin, who was afterward chosen to be Lord Iustice of Ireland.

Anno 1420. about the fourth Ides of Aprill, *Iames Butler*, Earle of Ormond, Lord Lievetenant of Ireland, landed at Waterford, and shortly after he caused a combat to be fought betwixt two of his cousins: of whom one was slaine in the place, and the other was carried away sore wounded unto Kilkenny.

On Saint *Georges* day, the same Lord Lievetenant held a Councell at Dublin, and there summoned a Parliament, and after the midst thereof, he made great preyes upon *O Rely Mac Mahon, Mac Gynoys*. And the seventh of Iune, the Parliament began at Dublin, and there were granted to the Lord Lievetenant, seaven hundred markes. And that Parliament continued for sixteene dayes, and was adjourned againe to Dublin untill Munday after Saint *Andrewes* day. And in the said Parliament were reckoned up the debts of the Lord *Iohn Talbot*, late Lord Lievetenant, which amounted to a great summe. Also on the morrow after Michaelmas day, *Michael Bodley* departed this life. Vpon Saint *Francis* Eeve, dyed Fryer *Nicholas Talbot*, Abbot of the Monastery of Saint *Thomas* the Martyr at Dublin, whom Fryer *Iohn Whiting* succeeded. The morrow after the feast day of the Apostles *Simon* and *Iude*, the Castle of Colmolin was taken by *Thomas Fitz Girald*. And on Saint *Katherines* Eeven, *Buttler*,

Sonne and heire unto the Earle of Ormond, was borne: and the Munday after Saint *Andrewes* day, the Parliament was begun at Dublin, and continued for thirteene dayes; and there were granted unto the Lord Lievetenant, three hundred markes, and then againe the Parliament was adjourned untill Munday after Saint *Ambrose* day. Then rumours were spread abroad, that the Lord *Thomas Fitz Iohn*, Earle of Desmond, was departed this life at Paris, upon Saint *Laurence* day, and that he was buried in the Covent of the Fryers Preachers there, the King of England being there present. After whom succeeded his Vncle *Iames Fitz Girald*, whom he had three severall times renounced, alledging that he was an unthrift, and had wasted his Patrimony both in Ireland and England, and that hee gave or would give lands unto the Monastery of Saint *Iames* of Keynisham.

Anno 1421. Our Lady day fell out to be upon Munday in Easter weeke. Also the Parliament began the third time at Dublin, the Munday after Saint *Ambroses* day; and there it was ordained that agents should be sent over unto the King for reformation of matters touching the state of the land; namely, the Archbishop of Armagh, and Sir *Christopher Preston*, Knight. At the same time *Richard Oitdian*, Bishop of Casshell, was accused of *Iohn Gese*, Bishop of Lismore and Waterford, upon thirty articles: among other, one was, that he made very much of the Irish, and that he loved none of the English nation, and

that he bestowed no Benefice upon any English man, and that he counselled other Bishops not to give the least Benefice to any of them: that he counterfeited the Kings Seale and letters Patents: that he went about to make himselfe King of Munster: and that hee had taken a Ring from the image of Saint *Patricke*, (which the Earle of Desmond had offered) and bestowed it upon his Concubine. And he exhibited many other enormious matters against him in writing, by whom the Lords and Commons were troubled. Also in the same Parliament, there arose a contention betwixt *Adam Payn*, Bishop of Clone, because the said *Adam* would have united unto his See, the Church of another Prelate, and the other would not give way unto it; and so they were dismissed unto the Court of Rome, & the Parliament continued eighteene dayes. Then newes were stirring, that the Lord *Thomas* of Lancaster, Duke of Clarence, was slaine in France, and many other with him. Vpon the seventh of May there was slaughter made upon the Earle of Ormonds, the Lord Lievetenants men, by Omordris, neere unto the Monastery of Leys, and there were seaven and twenty English men slaine: the chiefe whereof were *Purcell* and *Grant*, tenne Noble men were taken prisoners, and two hundred fled unto the said Abbey, and so saved themselves. About the Ides of May, dyed Sir *Iohn Bedloe*, knight, and *Ieffery Galon*, sometime Maior of Dublin, who was buried in the house of the Fryers Preachers of the same City. About the same time, *Mac Mahon* an Irish Lord, did much hurt in

Vrgile, by wasting and burning all before him Vpon the seaventh of Iune, the Lord Lievetenant entred into the Country, about Leys, upon Omordris, leading a very great army, and for the space of foure dayes together, slaying the people, till the Irish were glad to sue for peace. On the feast of Saint *Michael* the Arch-angell, *Thomas Stanley*, with all the Knights and Esquires of Meath and Irel, tooke *Meyle O Donnell* prisoner, and slue the rest, in the fourteenth yeere of the raigne of King *Henry* the sixt.

Here endeth the Chronicle of Henry Marleburrough.

FINIS

00141918

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018